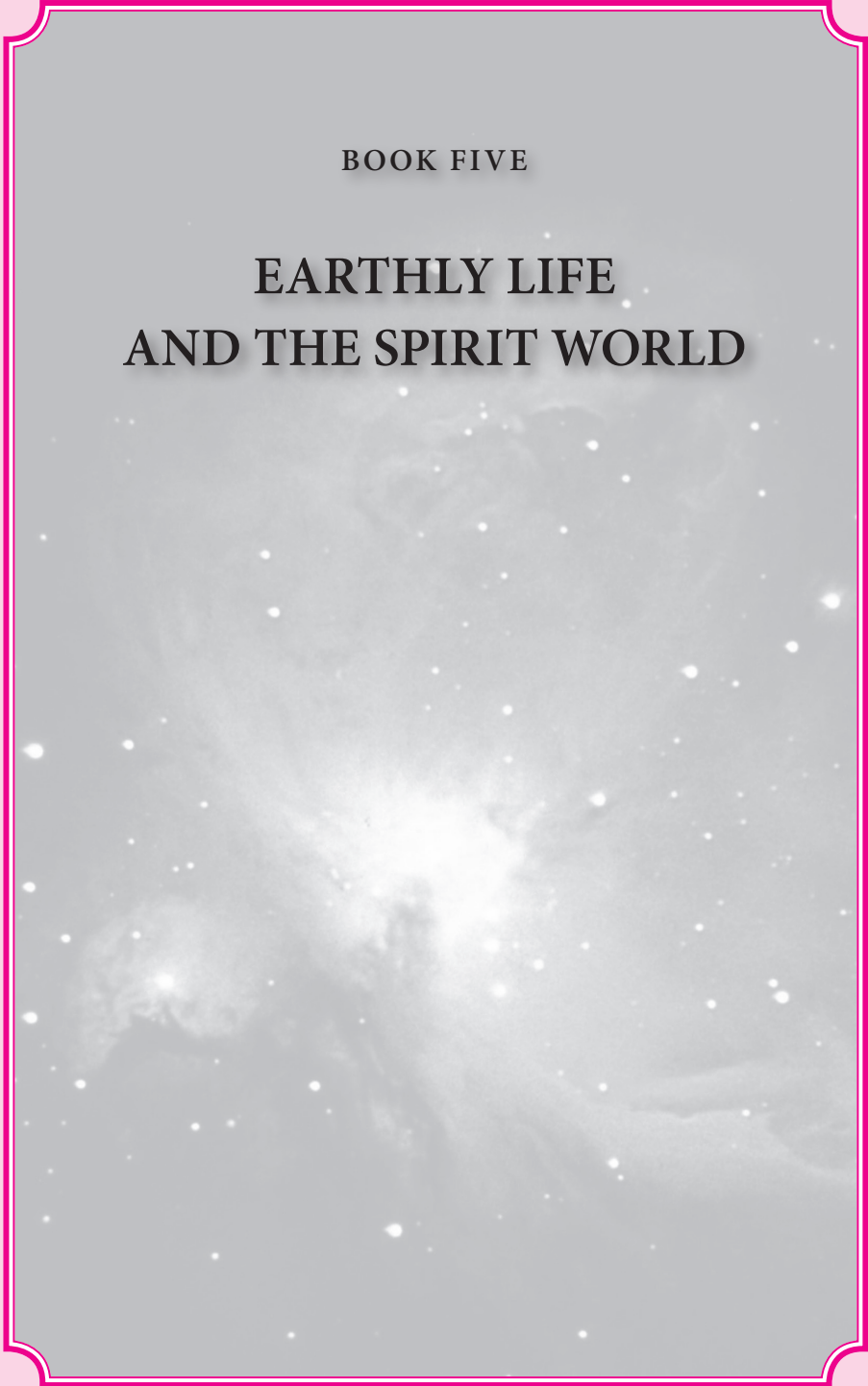


BOOK FIVE

**EARTHLY LIFE
AND THE SPIRIT WORLD**





Contents

Chapter 1. The Existence of Human Beings in the Physical and Spirit Worlds

Section 1. Our Course of Life	547
1.1. Prayers relating to the life course	547
1.2. The purpose that people desire	548
1.3. The reason for birth	548
1.4. The relationship between a moment and a lifetime	549
1.5. Infancy and the three orderly stages of the growing period	551
1.6. Our life path	551
1.7. The original homeland that we must seek	552
1.8. Our highest path in life	552
1.9. The standard of birth and the standard of life	553
1.9.1. The wrong standard of birth	553
Section 2. The Status and Character of Human Beings	554
2.1. God's purpose in creating humankind	554
2.2. Human beings as the interface between spiritual and physical worlds ...	555
2.3. Body and mind, and spirit self	555
2.4. Complete motion and resonance	556
Section 3. The Essence of Life	556
3.1. Spirit is the essence of life	556
3.2. The meaning of lord of all creation	557
3.3. Inner person and outer person	558
3.4. The purpose of life on earth is mind-body perfection	558
Section 4. The Nobility of Life on Earth	559
4.1. Life on earth is to prepare us for life in the spirit world	559
4.2. The preciousness of our life on earth	560
4.3. Habituality is important	561
4.4. The standard of life on earth	561
4.5. Everything will be recorded through the physical body	562
4.6. Life on earth is so important	562
4.7. Using our physical selves to fulfill our portion of responsibility	563
Section 5. Blessing and Eternal Life	564
5.1. Why we need to know about the issue of eternal life	564
5.2. The way of eternal life	565
5.2.1. Our lifetime and the issue of eternal life	565
5.2.2. Humankind seeks eternal life	566
5.2.3. Eternal life and religion	566
5.2.4. Why we should live eternally	567
5.2.5. Living for the sake of eternal life	568
5.2.6. What is the theory of eternal life?	568
5.2.7. The most important issue of eternal life	569

5.2.8. Ultimately, human beings must return to eternal life	569
5.2.9. Faith and the issue of eternal life	570
5.2.10. Unificationists and eternal life	571
5.2.11. The concept necessary for eternal life	571
5.3. Love and eternal life	571
5.3.1. Eternal life is directly connected with love	571
5.3.2. True love and eternal life	571
5.3.3. True love is absolutely necessary	572
5.3.4. The world after death is related with love	573
5.3.5. Eternal life comes only by living for the sake of others	574
5.4. Blessing and spirit world	574
5.4.1. The power of love	574
5.4.2. The spirit selves of husband and wife	575
5.4.3. Marriage and spirit world	575
5.4.4. The position of Blessed Families in the spirit world	576
5.4.5. The Blessing is a promise	576
5.4.6. The glory of the Blessing	576

Chapter 2. Death and the Spirit World

Section 1. The Inevitable Path of Our Life	578
1.1. The body is far from eternal life	578
1.2. How the majority of people live	578
1.3. Death is inevitable	579
1.4. God is the owner of life	580
Section 2. Understanding Death	581
2.1. The meaning of the Korean word <i>toraganda</i>	581
2.2. The place to which we must go	581
2.3. The day we pass on is a precious day	582
2.4. The spiritual connection of life and death	582
2.5. Death in relation to the value of life	583
2.6. Death is a process to link three worlds	583
2.7. Things to do before we die	586
2.7.1. Crossing the last border	586
2.7.2. Modeling ourselves after God's external form, heart and divine character	586
2.7.3. Do not sin	586
2.7.4. Live and die for the world	587
2.7.5. Work hard	587
2.7.6. Work for the public good	587
2.7.7. Experience love	589
2.8. What to leave behind before going to the spirit world	591
2.8.1. Leave a tomb of love behind	591
2.8.2. Proprietary rights in the spirit world are determined through witnessing	591

2.8.3. Why we should have lots of children	597
2.9. Our attitude in the face of death	599
2.10. When entering the spirit world	602
2.10.1. At the time of impending death	602
2.10.2. When entering the spirit world	604
2.10.3. Documents required for entry procedures into the spirit world	606
2.11. Things you will know clearly only after you die	606
2.12. Altruism gets you closer to God	607
2.13. Judgment	608
Section 3. To go to a Higher Realm in the Spirit World	609
3.1. The standard for religious people is the spirit world	609
3.2. The determination of proprietary rights in the spirit world	609
3.3. Love people	609
3.4. Love God even more	610
3.5. Establish the family foundation	610
3.6. Live centered on the tradition of the realm of the heart	610
3.7. The pass with which to enter the spirit world	611
Chapter 3. The Spirit World	
Section 1. The Spirit World Can Be Experienced with the Physical Body	612
1.1. The spirit world and the present time	612
1.2. The future age	612
1.3. Spiritual experiences are also necessary	614
1.4. The course of spiritual experience	614
1.5. How to develop your spiritual senses	620
1.6. Advent (substantial works)	621
Section 2. What Kind of Place Is the Spirit World?	622
2.1. The spirit world and the physical world	622
2.1.1. The center of the spirit world and physical world	622
2.1.2. Unity of the spiritual and physical worlds	624
2.2. The spirit world clearly exists	624
2.3. The spirit world is the driving force for faith (Saint Paul's vision of the third heaven)	625
2.4. When God created the spirit world	626
2.5. Where is the spirit world?	626
2.6. What kind of place is the spirit world?	626
Section 3. The Content and Situation of the Spirit World	627
3.1. The Fall led to ignorance about the spirit world	627
3.2. The spirit world is a sphere permitting instant perception	628
3.3. The center of the spirit world	629
3.4. The organization of the spirit world (hierarchy)	629
3.5. Clothing, food and shelter in the spirit world	630
3.6. How to use knowledge and power in the spirit world	632
3.7. Human relationships in the spirit world	633

3.8. The center of the spirit world is love	635
3.8.1. The air of the spirit world is love	635
3.8.2. The spirit world is the place of living a love-centered life	636
3.9. The spirit world – the world of heart	636
3.10. The situation of the spirit world	637
3.11. Life in the spirit world	638
3.12. The work we have to do in the spirit world	638
Section 4. The Position and Actual Situations of the Spirit World	639
4.1. The position of the spirit world	639
4.2. The actual state of affairs in the spirit world	640
4.3. The pride of the spirit world	640
4.4. The Unification Church and the spirit world	641
4.5. Korean customs and the spirit world	642
4.6. The Korean language and the spirit world	643
4.7. The spirit world's sphere of activity	643
4.8. The spirit world's possessions	643
4.9. God and the spirit world	643

Chapter 4. The Kingdom of Heaven

Section 1. Understanding the Kingdom of Heaven	644
1.1. The location of the Kingdom of Heaven	644
1.2. Christianity and heaven	645
1.3. Jesus and paradise	646
1.4. Heart and heaven	648
1.5. The physical body and hell	650
1.6. Even people in hell long for heaven	655
1.7. God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven	655
1.8. The right view of heaven	657
Section 2. Preparing to Go to Heaven	659
2.1. The stronghold of heaven	659
2.2. The standard for going to heaven	661
2.3. The starting point of the Kingdom of Heaven	662
2.4. The essence of the Kingdom of Heaven	662
2.5. The framework of the Kingdom of Heaven	663
Section 3. The Prerequisites and Conditions for Going to Heaven	663
3.1. The prerequisites for going to heaven	663
3.1.1. Suffering is needed	663
3.1.2. We need love	665
3.1.3. Actual results are needed	666
3.1.4. Altruism is needed	667
3.2. The lifestyle that enables us to go to heaven	668
3.2.1. Our position	668
3.2.2. Instances of not being able to go to heaven	669
3.2.3. Our life for the sake of Kingdom of Heaven	670

Contents	545
3.2.4. The Kingdom of Heaven and us	671
3.3. The four-position foundation and heaven	672
3.3.1. Families enter heaven	672
3.3.2. Jesus and his family	675
3.3.3. The four-position foundation and the Kingdom of Heaven	675
Section 4. Triumphal Entry through the Gates of Heaven	676
4.1. The door to people’s hearts	676
4.2. The meaning of “Opening the Gate of Heaven”	676
4.2.1. The reason for “Opening the Gate of Heaven”	676
4.2.2. The origin of the “Opening of the Gates of Heaven”	677
4.2.3. True Parents and the gates of Heaven	678
4.2.4. Our attitude to the “Opening of the Gate of Heaven”	680
4.3. The path to heaven through fulfilling one’s portion of responsibility.	681
4.4. Heaven and hell are our options	681
Section 5. Instructions Concerning Heaven and Hell	682
5.1. Formulating our view of heaven and hell	682
5.2. The importance of life in the spirit world and life on earth	682
Chapter 5. The Messiah and the Spirit World	
Section 1. Jesus and the Spirit World	684
Section 2. The Returning Lord and the Spirit World	685
Section 3. True Parents and the Spirit World	686
3.1. The difference between your natural parents and True Parents	686
3.2. True Parents are the axis	687
3.3. True Parents is the center	688
3.4. The strength of the bond with True Parents	688
Section 4. Rev. Moon and the Spirit World	692
4.1. Rev. Moon’s establishment of spiritual conditions and its foundation	692
4.2. Special authority in relation to the spirit world	694
4.3. The unification of the spirit world and the unification of the physical world	695
4.4. Reception in spirit world according to heart and actual results	697
4.5. Making spiritual experiences part of daily life	698
4.6. We go to the spirit world after leaving our love behind	698
Section 5. True Parents’ Family and the Spirit World	699
5.1. The establishment of the right of the eldest son	699
5.2. The center of love established in the spirit world	700
5.3. The establishment of the kingship on earth and in the spirit world	701
Chapter 6. Our Position in Relation to the Spirit World	
Section 1. The Fruit of Life and the Divine Spirit	703
Section 2. Judgment and Approval (Certification)	706
2.1. Categories of Judgment	706
2.2. Prepare a passport to Heaven	707

Section 3. Registration in the Spirit World	712
3.1. Freedoms enjoyed by the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven	712
3.2. Special gifts that can be carried to the spirit world	712
3.3. The Kingdom of Heaven created through the Three Great Subjects Principle	714
3.4. Conditions for registration	715
3.5. People who can be chiefs in the spirit world	717

Chapter 7. Our Relationship with Those in the Spirit World

Section 1. Spiritual Phenomena and the Liberation of Spirits	719
1.1. The good spirit world and the evil spirit world	719
1.2. Spiritual phenomena	720
1.3. Letters from the spirit world	720
1.4. The hope of people in the spirit world	722
1.5. Liberating those in the spirit world from resentment	723
1.6. Unification of the spirit world	725
Section 2. The Relationship Between People on Earth and the Spirits	726
2.1. People on earth and the spirits	726
2.2. The position of people in the spirit world	727
2.3. Spirits outnumber people on earth	729
2.4. Wandering spirits	729
2.5. Discerning spirits by the mind	730
2.6. The value of life on earth	730
Section 3. Our Ancestors and Ourselves	731
3.1. Ancestors are looking upon us	731
3.2. We should surpass our ancestors	732
3.3. We should also visit our ancestral graves	733
3.4. Ancestors we can meet in the spirit world	734
Section 4. New Spiritual Age	735
4.1. The coming of the age of extrasensory perception	735
4.2. Entering a new age through the declaration of the Day of the Victory of Heaven	736
4.3. Unification Ceremony and spiritual assistance	736
4.4. Ceremony of One Heart and ancestral assistance	738
Section 5. Returning Resurrection and the Assistance of Spirits	739
5.1. Position of our predecessors in the spirit world	739
5.2. Spirit world mobilization and assistance	740
5.3. The spirit world and ancestors	742
5.4. The hope of spirit people	744
5.5. Returning resurrection and rebirth	744
5.5.1. Returning resurrection	744
5.5.2. Answers about the principle of rebirth	745

CHAPTER ONE

The Existence of Human Beings in the Physical and Spirit Worlds

Section 1. Our Course of Life

1.1. Prayers relating to the life course

“Beloved Heavenly Father, I thank You for Your grace, and for having shielded me in my struggles from my childhood until now; during those years I have been apprehensive of any humiliation or shame that Heaven might suffer. Among all the good things on this earth, there is nothing more precious than connecting to Your original heart. Knowing this, we must infinitely long for that relationship. We must keep in mind that those who experience Your love will have no regrets even if they forget about all the things of this world. Now we must seek the ideal world, the original homeland where we live by Your love. We must prepare today on earth for the day of our birth as liberated children endowed with the authority of freedom of our third life.

We must know that just as we needed to be healthy in the womb to be born to lead a healthy life on earth, we need a wholesome earthly life to have a wholesome life in heaven. As the world today is one of conflict under the dominion of evil, we must we must be resolved

to fight to the death in order to be blessed with the cooperation of heaven and earth and to keep in step with the dynamic fortunes of the universe. We must resolve that our descendants will never be placed in the same position as we have been.” (49-308, 1971.10.17)

“Beloved Father, when we think of how You exist and have toiled unremittingly to usher in a new spring, we must become Your infinitely grateful and joyous sons and daughters who lament the fact that we have yet to offer our entire life and love to You. In our predestined relationship with You, our lives are meant to be harmonized, and completely absorbed in and by You so that we too, may greet the new spring.

We must realize that only when we greet spring for the first time will the flowers bloom. We must not become such pitiful souls who have never done so. Just as a flower goes through summer and autumn before blooming and bearing fruit, we too are to undergo a similar process to bear fruit.

We know that for a tree to bear fruit, it first absorbs life elements through its roots, trunk and branches in summer, concentrating a perfect life force to bring forth a second life. Similarly,

we must become the sons and daughters who are introspectively determining whether we have a life force welling up in our hearts – one that is capable of rebirth in a new world even if our bodies should die.

No matter how much time flies by, no matter how fiercely the storms rage, our inner life force must withstand the intrusions of the environment and persevere persistently on the path of growth. Only in this way, can we welcome the new spring and become a seed, the original source of a second life, which can be planted again.

Likewise, no matter how pathetic we may look externally, if we maintain our value as the original essence that can enhance the spiritual life force and as a seed that can be planted in the infinite world, we are not miserable people even though we may think we are. Please allow us to realize that the more miserable we may appear externally, the more our internal value is complete and guaranteed.” (32-36, 1970.6.14)

“Father, we have realized that without the desire to serve and bow down humbly to You, we can have no relationship with You in the eternal world. Open the doors of our hearts to feel Your heart and hear Your voice welling up from the depths of our hearts, and guide us to regain our lost bodies today. Help us to appreciate Your historical course of toil and trouble to find each one of us, that we may humbly bow our heads before You.” (4-280, 1958.9.14)

1.2. The purpose that people desire

God does not have a body. Therefore, in order to manifest His body, God used Adam as His body, showing His face through him. That is the ideal of creation.

God is the original spiritual focal point and Adam is the original physical focal point. These two focal points generate a 90-degree angle. This is God’s purpose of creation and the purpose that people desire. Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have occupied the positions of father and mother eternally in the spirit world; yet, due to the Fall, this was not possible. Had there been no Fall, everyone could have gone to Heaven simply by attending their parents as though they were attending God. (119-109, 1982.7.4)

1.3. The reason for birth

This created world is round everywhere: the sun, the earth, and the stars; everything is created round. Even our mouth, if we analyze it, is round. No matter what, everything is created that way. Then, the universe makes relationships by going around and around, making circular, cyclical movements. Even if one individual thing has a round shape, it does not exist by itself individually but makes a relational connection with the whole.

Then, why are we born? We are born to beat in rhythm with this vast universe. Ocean waves lapping against the shore lap against our hearts as well. Gentle

breezes sighing serenely lull our hearts into serenity. Flowers in bloom release rich fragrances and stir the fragrances in our hearts. (104-122, 1979.4.22)

If we are born, raised, live and die in love, then we can be grateful for our birth, life and death. You were all born by having participated in the place where your father and mother loved and treasured each other exceedingly. You are participants in this love. Since you were born through your parents' love, you consider yourselves born as the flags planted through your parents' love. These flags flutter to express love. We are all meant to live for the sake of love throughout our lives. So you should wave the flag of love for your mother, wave the flag of love when you see your father, and wave the flag of love for your siblings. (103-258, 1979.2.25)

1.4. The relationship between a moment and a lifetime

Your living body cannot be perfected unless your entire existence becomes a foothold for absorbing nutrients. This phenomenon occurs in the natural world. The crossroads of life do not appear over a long period of time but in a single moment.

People who ignore a moment fail to obtain something precious. They cannot become great people, nor inherit God's throne and crown. Thus, for the sake of one bright shining moment, exercise care with each word you utter, each action you take, and even each thought

you entertain. Deal with life and solve problems, believing that the contents of your daily life will all remain as phenomena in relationship to the world. That is the only way the realm of victory is determined.

In this way, the realm of victory is determined in one moment. It is the same with the historical realm of victory and the cosmic realm of victory. Those who know the infinite value of one bright shining moment and live accordingly can become great people, even saints or God's sons and daughters. In this way, the junction of life and death is crossed in a single moment. (31-217, 1970.5.31)

Today, our attitude is the problem. Of course, it is necessary to first desire the coming of the kingdom and wish for the Will to be done. Yet, what is more important is how we ourselves can personally become one with God's will.

If we take this one hour, we see that how we use it to become one with the Will is more important than to desire the Kingdom of God to come. Therefore, we must first create environments as individuals, families, tribes and peoples that will enable us to inherit God's will, whereupon we can then proceed to establish a relationship with God's Kingdom. Then, centered on God, how do we make a relationship with the Will in this one hour - if you are given an hour - within the sphere of your daily living? This is a very important issue.

Looking at the history of the providence of restoration, there were four thousand years from Adam's family

through Noah's, Abraham's and Moses' families down to Jesus' family. Here, however, what led to their failures did not occur over the span of, say, a year. In Adam's family, the Fall of Adam and Eve was not something planned out and put into action over the span of a year or a decade or even several decades. Their mistake happened in a flash, and when we think about how that failure of one moment has been perpetuated over eons of time, we can understand the fearfulness and dreadfulness of that instant.

Due to the failure of that one moment, so many people who walked the path of righteousness in the course of history had to undergo untold suffering, and many races that could not follow the Will fell into the abyss of destruction. All these became the origin of a tremendous offering of indemnity. When we understand this, a single hour that we ordinarily live so casually in our daily life becomes fearful; but even more, we have to feel how fearful a moment is, even one second of one hour that goes by as the clock steadily ticks. Even the eternal Kingdom of Heaven does not exist without having an integral relationship with the single moment.

Eternity does not start when we die, but at the moment we come to know God's will. Here, if for even an instant there is a leap in the relationship of time or an abyss created, eternity will be interrupted. Therefore, while walking the path of faith in the course of your lives, do not procrastinate by deferring your providential responsibilities from this year to the next, and then to the year after that,

or from your youth to your midlife and finally into your old age. We cannot live like that. People with such a lifestyle will die without having ever spent even one day of being one with the Will over the course of their lifetime. They cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven.

However good your country of residence may be, you cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven if you were unable to live even one day by a victorious standard; you cannot enter the eternal world if you failed to live even one year victoriously. Hence, while it is important for believers to go forth dreaming of eternity, what is even more important is how they actually eradicate evil and whether they become the standard-bearers of goodness. This is preeminently crucial.

From this perspective, Adam's momentary lapse led to eons of anguish. It was in Adam's family that Cain and Abel had to dissolve the anguish of their parents and demolish the wall that existed between the brothers and create the origin of one family. Yet the murder of Abel, who was set up as the representative of the providence of restoration, was also an instantaneous incident.

In the 120-year course during which Noah toiled to build the ark, in only a brief moment God issued the command, "The day to fulfill My wish has come: all aboard!" Those who followed this order were able to receive the blessings of the eternal God; those who did not were buried within the realm of eternal judgment.

It was the same with Abraham: God's promise that his descendants would be

as numerous as the stars in the sky and as the sands on the seashore” (Genesis 22:17) was bestowed in the twinkling of an eye. Abraham’s sacrificial offering did not require decades but rather a mere day’s work. The time it took him to cut the offering and place it on the altar was not more than an hour, yet that single hour historically bore the seeds of all life and death, curse and blessing.

Today, what believers should dread is not the visitation of judgment in the Last Days but the question of how they will harmonize their daily activities and face life’s crossroads in alignment with God’s will. (37-217, 1970.12.27)

1.5. Infancy and the three orderly stages of the growing period

How did God create Adam and Eve? If He used clay, what kind was it? Where did He begin? From which point did Adam and Eve’s lives start? We cannot think that God created them as adults, but rather as babies. Without the notion that God behaved as a pregnant mother who subsequently gave birth to, nourished and nurtured a baby, we cannot logically explain the formation of all existence through the three orderly stages of growth. Logically, Adam and Eve passed through infancy before entering the growth and completion stages. This is heavenly law.

What was Adam and Eve’s infancy like? We must proceed from the concept that the invisible God nurtured a baby whose beginnings were in the world without form and who could pass

through the course in the physical realm. (225-198, 1992.1.20)

1.6. Our life path

Since the society, nation and world in which we live are far from ideal, all manner of suffering occurs, and good and evil are at cross-purposes.

If we took a random sample of a hundred men, it would reveal that one hundred percent of them jostle among themselves in “an every man for himself” struggle within their circumstances to cope with the demands of their mundane affairs.

Therefore, in our daily lives, we all acutely lack the confidence that we can complete the day’s work that we planned in the morning. With a wider scope of activities we would need proportionately more drive and determination to bring a victorious result in our everyday life. Lacking these, that day cannot be victorious. Such days turn into months and months into years.

We also lack environments conducive for meeting our monthly goals. To end a month victoriously, we need the drive and determination necessary to achieve breakthroughs in tackling both the details and complexities of that month. Without them, we cannot conclude our monthly activities victoriously.

Getting through a year successfully requires us to be equipped with a fighting spirit or driving force that can thrust aside all the challenges of each and every one of its 365 days. We can then celebrate that year victoriously. If we live a

year like that, and continue in this vein, it will eventually add up to ten, and then twenty, and then thirty years, and that eventually becomes our life path. (31-30, 1970.4.12)

People living on earth today cannot escape from the constraints of time. That has been true throughout history. Individuals, families, tribes, people, nations and the world all move within the realm of time.

Wherever people exist, there is always some goal to attain. We are to focus on such a goal for ten, twenty, thirty, seventy years and, indeed, our entire lives. The greater our goal, the stronger our internal commitment needs to be. Unless we maintain an internal determination that surpasses the goal through the process called time, the goal will be unattainable. (31-149, 1970.5.24)

1.7. The original homeland that we must seek

You may not know of the reality of the spirit world, but I enjoy the special benefit from God of having a clear insight into that unknown world. Digging into the root of that world, I found its principles to be quite simple. In the spirit world only those who lived altruistically in line with God's universal principles can enter the higher realms. The world structured along those lines is the ideal heavenly kingdom. That place is the original homeland that humankind must seek. Today, although we are exiles from our original homeland and live of

fallen life, we are destined to return there. God had to create a path for this in the course of history because we could not do so by our own efforts.

This is why God raised up many different religions. They are training grounds through which He has been directing all people along that path, whatever their race, cultural background, customs and traditions. Religions are the training grounds for training people to become eligible to return to the original homeland. Taking into account the diverse cultural backgrounds ranging across the four corners of the earth, God is leading humanity toward a unified world of religion that can progress upward onto higher ground.

What does religion which guides people to the original homeland, centrally teach? It is to live for the sake of others. As highly developed religions tend to emphasize this principle, they teach us to be gentle and meek, to stand in a position to elevate others and live for their sake, and to serve them sacrificially. All this serves to instill discipline in us to abide by the laws of the Kingdom of Heaven. (78-115, 1975.5.6)

1.8. Our highest path in life

What should be our life path? It is the path of possessing God's love. Possessing God's love is life's highest and final destination. Everyone, men and women alike, must go this way. Our life path must lead us to the infinite God of love. The greatest life path consists of finding God's love by crossing over the peaks of

death tens and even hundreds of times, and continuing in that search even after death.

What is the endpoint of our desires? It is the possession of God's love. If, in that regard, we possess love more precious than our own, God cannot be ours. Thus, we need to possess God's love. If we possessed only God's love, then it would be all right even if He were not present. When His love becomes mine and mine becomes His, the internal and the external become one for the first time. A nation based on such love becomes an ideal homeland without upper and lower classes.

When we lie in that place of love, we feel that there is nothing under the sun that does not appear good and that does not exist for our sake. Since God's love is like that, the heavenly world, which is humankind's destination, namely the Kingdom of Heaven, is a place filled with love. (39-210, 1971.1.10)

1.9. The standard of birth and the standard of life

1.9.1. The wrong standard of birth

People in today's world who flaunt their pedigrees and parade their degrees as marks of social distinction, are unaware that their births were spiritually sullied. They do not know that they were born with the love, life and lineage of Satan; God's enemy. This is a serious problem.

Due to the Fall, people have been born from Satan's love which was passed

down to their parents. Satan's blood has made its way down through the lives of our mothers and fathers to us in the present day. The fruit of those three then, is you. As such, you all belong to the satanic lineage. In other words, Satan's blood is running through your veins. Therefore, he automatically bears his ideal fruit while God strives to redeem those very men and women and transform them into originally pure and perfect people. You all began from Satan's love and are born from his lineage.

Since your start was all wrong, you must return to the original point. As we originated from false parents, we need to return and start anew from true parents. How serious is this? It is imperative to inherit God's love, life and lineage afresh.

That is why, when you receive the Blessing, you undergo the ceremony for changing the lineage. You must believe in this more than your own life. Just because it is a Unification Church ceremony, you should not think of it as some ordinary ritual. It is like a wonder drug, an antidote, to restore the dead back to life.

Our ancestors committed an error so grave that countless people fell victim to its aftereffects throughout the course of human history. Knowing this, we cannot tread that same path again ever again! We paid a ghastly price throughout history for having perpetuated illicit love in the fallen spiritual and physical worlds, with far-reaching consequences for individuals, families, societies, nations and the world. (216-109, 1991.3.9)

1.9.2. The standard of life

When I say life here, I mean eternal life. I am not referring only to the spirit world, but to a life to live for eternity. Each individual was created to be an object of God's love. You are the object partner of the absolute God, and the partner in His love. God cherishes the notion of true love more than He values Himself. He is the absolute and eternal center of life. His ideal is even more eternal and the center of that ideal is true love. The partner of that love is you.

The attribute of love promotes unity between partners. Such love can unify a nation. Thus, one partner can accompany the other partner in any position and follow unconditionally. You can inherit God's entire fortune and even His entire heart. I went through a miserable course to discover this and now stand on that foundation. It is sublime and lofty and cannot be exchanged for anything: it is an amazing grace. For that reason, I stand in the same position with God. I share the eternal position of true love. The spirit world is in a different dimension from this limited earthly world. We cannot move freely within mundane confines, but as the spirit world is a higher-dimensional place, you can do anything there; you can leap across time. If you want something based on love, you can have it all anytime, anywhere.

We were originally created as eternal beings. If we become eternal beings of true love and go to the spirit world, we will be free. The first standard of life is the standard of good and evil, the sec-

ond is the original starting point, and the third is eternal life. (216-107, 1991.3.9)

Section 2. The Status and Character of Human Beings

2.1. God's purpose in creating humankind

Why did God create humankind? First, it was for God to stand in the position of a parent. A parent, however, is invisible even in the spirit world. There is no model. Thus, in order to become the parent of human beings with a form, God must have a form. Otherwise, He cannot be the center.

Second, a vertical line is one-dimensional and does not generate an area; reproduction cannot take place in the spirit world. A large area or space can only unfold horizontally based on a vertical axis with a 360-degree perpendicular rotation.

Third, it was to maintain the eternity of the realm of the partner of love. It was not only Adam and Eve who were to be God's partners. Adam and Eve's children would have stood in the position of God's partners, just as their parents did. Therefore, God produced people in order to preserve their position as His partners in perpetuity.

Both Adam and Eve called God, "Father". Then would their children call Him uncle or grandfather? They would call Him Father. The word partner implies equality. We must multiply God's love horizontally and perfect its value. The value of perfected love is one.

That is equality.

To recapitulate, first, God needed a form or shape, namely that of a parent. He acquired that form in order to manifest Himself spiritually as Adam's father. Second, God needed a production center for the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. As such, husbands and wives are factories. Using that analogy, would it be better to engage in mass production or small-scale production? Mass production is better. Through automation those factories could definitely produce in mass and pack the Kingdom of Heaven to capacity. That is why women are created to bear many children. (222-337, 1991.11.7)

2.2. Human beings as the interface between spiritual and physical worlds

God made all things and humankind. Everything began with God at the center. Through creating people, He wanted to see Himself in oneness with humankind and all things in a position of equilibrium; such was His will in the creation. There was God and there was the created world, and humankind stood in the middle between them. As such, human beings function as the interface between the spiritual and physical worlds. (67-143, 1973.6.1)

2.3. Body and mind, and spirit self

The cosmos in which we live today has two axes: a visible axis and an invisible one, creating a dual structure.

Objects revolve around a subject, which itself rotates, similar to the give-and-take action between mind and body. All beings exist according to this principle. In the same way, in the fallen world today, this axis must be reset in line with the way of restoration.

What is the center of a person's body? It is the mind. The body revolves around the mind and moves according to its commands. When the mind directs the body to go east, it must do so, and likewise in the opposite direction. The body cannot move at its own whims and fancies. (136-13, 1985.12.20)

We have both mind and body. Above our mind is our spirit and above our spirit is God. We can only perfect ourselves by becoming completely one with God. Despite being such finite entities, we represent all of history and all destinies of the future, and therefore possess cosmic value. (4-267, 1958.8.3)

People must heed their minds in seeking their destinies. This is heavenly law; God strikes those who disobey their minds' dictates. All throughout history, God has been teaching us to live in conformity with our conscience and not be ensnared by the evils of materialism. Then does our conscience correspond to heavenly law one hundred percent? It does not, due to the innumerable barriers that obstruct it. Before the gateway to heaven are entrances into a labyrinth of challenges. In Christian terms, they are the gates of judgment. The current trend of thought is ushering in a time of

fear, insecurity and chaos. It is a time in which people cannot hold on to the center however how hard they try.

We should not allow ourselves to be encumbered by material things. Why not? When God created humankind with a physical self and a spirit self, the spirit was the center. (4-269, 1958.8.3)

2.4. Complete motion and resonance

Resonance means vibrating at the same frequency. Our internal self, which lives for eternity, and our external self, which lives in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, should be able to resonate centering on love. In resonance, sound waves coincide and become intertwined, all the while oscillating around the core. Likewise, when the spirit self and the physical self harmonize with each other and God's love, spiritual cells and physical cells engage in perfect motion together.

Therefore, when our eyes become operational, they can see everything in heaven and on earth. This is because they are engaged in perfect motion. Is it not the same with a microphone? If its capacity is good it will resonate a hundred percent. Similarly, once our physical self and spirit self become one and attain a volatile state through the force of love, heaven and earth, God and everything else must resonate sympathetically. (171-102, 1987.12.13)

The human mind-body dichotomy applies to men and women alike. Considering that a man and a woman each

have a spirit self as well as a physical self, together they actually represent four entities. Divided they become four people. How do these separate four entities become one? Why did God create four people in this way? With God's true love as their center, they can achieve perfect union.

All of you possess a spirit that we in the Unification Church call the spirit self and a physical self. The spirit self, though invisible to our eyes, does exist. Then, when do your spirit self and physical self become one? This is the problem. It is the same with a tuning fork: when you strike one of its prongs, then the other prong vibrates at the same frequency.

In like manner, when God's love acts upon our mind, our body automatically responds. That being the case, it is not God's wisdom, power or might that brings the mind and body into full resonance, but only His love. What is the focus, the ideal benchmark, which your five physical senses and your five spiritual senses long to reach? It is neither God's might nor His wisdom. His love is the focus and benchmark for everything. (138-254, 1986.1.24)

Section 3. The Essence of Life

3.1. Spirit is the essence of life

Where there is a nucleus, there must be a reciprocally related being to revolve around it. As electrons revolve around protons, human beings are meant to revolve around God. God can pursue

the providence of restoration because the human mind, which is like an electron, naturally relates to God's mind, which can be likened to the nucleus.

When we seek the word of truth, we can feel God's life pulsating and the harmony of His love. Similarly, by seeking God's life and love through the path of truth, we become people of value.

The truth is eternal and unchanging. Then how can we find the truth while distinguishing between good and evil in this fallen world? We do it through eschewing selfishness and through constant self-effacement.

The Bible also teaches us that those who exalt themselves will be humbled and that those who humble themselves will be exalted (Matthew 23:12; Luke 14:11; 18:14). We are essentially spiritual.

Therefore, when you go to the next world, you will realize more deeply that the essence of being human is in living for the sake of others. Yet why do people persist in living selfishly in all things? It is because all humanity became bound in blood ties to the angel, namely Satan, who contravened heavenly law. (2-137, 1957.3.17)

We must now eat spiritual food. Which should be tastier: physical food or spiritual food? In order to survive and stand on God's side, you need to train yourselves to enjoy the taste of spiritual food more than physical food. The taste of a life centered on spiritual power should far exceed that of a life based on physical might. (131-210, 1984.5.4)

3.2. The meaning of lord of all creation

What is meant by the term lord of all creation? Who is the lord of all creation? Some say human beings, but the fundamental lord of all creation is God. You all know that spirits exist. We all have spirits and, as we are the leaders among the spirits, in the final analysis, we are lords of all creation directly connected to God. Human beings cannot become the lords of all creation on their own. How can they, as created beings, become lords of all creation? Being created makes them reciprocal and resultant beings; as such, they can neither communicate with nor possess the origin, but rather exist to be possessed by it.

Clearly, we are all resultant beings. The lords of all creation I am referring to are those occupying the central position in the spirit world. I am talking about the originally intended relationship of oneness between God and humankind. Those lords of all creation are in the position to communicate with God. Although human beings are called the lords of all creation, not everybody is actually qualified to be one. Those who live individualistically are ineligible to join the club of the lords of all creation. And those who have distinguished themselves by seeking the greater good are eligible. God seeks to fulfill His wishes through such people. When that happens, whose heaven will it be? Not His but theirs. (32-136, 1970.7.5)

How should people live? Eternally.

Living some eighty years in this evil world, some people may see no difference between the death of an ant and that of a human being; yet there is a difference. We are different because we are spiritual beings. How is it that we can become the lords of all creation? It is because our mind does not age; it is immutable and therefore carries the highest authority. All other things undergo change; even pure gold weathers away. (159-277, 1968.5.19)

Based on what premises can we be called the lords of all creation? It is neither money, nor knowledge, nor power, but rather God's sublime love. (210-308, 1990.12.27)

3.3. Inner person and outer person

What is the original destiny of humankind? It is to enjoy perfected love and extol the values of praise and respect within the realm of God's absolute love. Humanity emerged amidst the complete union and harmony of the destinies of heaven and earth. Hence, we have an invisible mind and a visible body. If we had been born according to our original destiny, would our body and mind be divided in conflict or would they be in total unity? They would be in total unity.

Your inner person and outer person are in conflict. When will this conflict end? After ten years? Or not even by the time you die? If God had created human beings in that way, then He would not be a god with a single purpose but a god

with dual purposes. Such a god would be a chaotic god. All the laws of the universe systematically pursue a distinct purpose without being at cross-purposes. From that perspective, we know that we were not originally created in this way. Let us, therefore, cast our body aside and seek our original mind. (44-194, 1971.5.7)

Which is more important, our physical self or our spirit self? Not the flesh, but the spirit. Our flesh has a shelf life averaging seventy to eighty years, within the limited realms of time and space, before disappearing into nothingness. But our spirit has the power to transcend both time and space. Accordingly, it is our original purpose to recognize our historic responsibility and fulfill it.

However well you may live physically, in the final analysis you will all die. Our bodies will perish in any event. That is how we are made. Then which are more important: spiritual standards or physical standards? Our lives are not meant to be based on physical standards. The flesh exists for the spirit and vice versa. Do not get stuck in the rut of a secular lifestyle. You must become entities that combine the spirit and flesh in a position of saving the flesh, and begin from a position of greater worth. (20-324, 1968.7.14)

3.4. The purpose of life on earth is mind-body perfection

What is the purpose of the Will? It is to perfect humankind spiritually and physically. Individually, our spirit represents the past and our body the pres-

ent. Both worlds were invaded. We are to conquer the present satanic world physically and the past satanic world spiritually. When you triumph over both past and present by upholding the standard of mind over matter, your future will be blessed. (73-96, 1974.8.4)

We need to know that it is the physical world, not the spirit world, which is the subject. The physical world, not the spirit world, is the subject in achieving perfection. The perfection of the physical world encompasses the perfection of both the spiritual and physical worlds. Thus, life on earth is precious. (91-177, 1977.2.6)

Section 4. The Nobility of Life on Earth

4.1. Life on earth is to prepare us for life in the spirit world

When God created humankind and all things and proclaimed them good, He intended that they not fight among themselves. Religion teaches us to strike our body and make it submit to our mind. We must cross over from evil to goodness. The complete victory of our body means that even Satan has been completely uprooted and subjugated. We can go to heaven only after subjugating Satan. We cannot conquer Satan without a physical body. This is because the mishap that befell our body occurred on earth and consequently must be remedied on earth. Unless we accomplish our designated tasks on earth, we will

end up in eternal hell. Conversely, when you triumph on earth and stand on the heavenly side of goodness, you can go to the eternal Kingdom of Heaven. (65-293, 1973.2)

Life on earth is short. We do not live long. If you realized that, your hours would become too precious to be spent on sleeping and eating. Eat, sleep and play on the move. The more you live this way, the greater the blessing you will receive; more than anyone else in the whole wide world. (80-225, 1975.10.23)

Although our tenure on earth may be limited to eighty years, our stage is the altar of the world. That being so, our possessions representing the creation belong to the world, our bodies are the bodies of all the people of the world, and our minds are the minds of all the people of the world. Such a heart is one with God. All these combine to make one altar. (75-165, 1975.1.2)

Things do not happen by chance. Preparation is never easy. Viewed against the backdrop of a lifetime, childhood is the time to prepare for adolescence. The prime of life is the time to prepare for old age, which in turn is the time to prepare to go to the spirit world. Our lifetime is a period of training during which we undergo a course that prepares us to acquire a universal personality. (147-188, 1986.9.21)

We live in this world; yet it is not the only world that exists. There is also the

spirit world. This world and the spirit world should be integrated together rather than two separate worlds. Where is the place we are to go to and live in? Of course, while living physically on earth, we are proceeding into the eternal world. Ordinarily, people are simply born into this world, pass through youth, reach their prime, and enter old age. Their life passes like the setting sun. Yet those who know of the spirit world realize that a lifetime is but a fleeting moment compared to the eternal life after death. That being given, our lifetime serves to prepare us to welcome the world of eternity.

Student performance is measured by standards set by the school. One standard is based on the number of credits they are expected to take in an academic year. If students achieve a lesser number, they fall correspondingly below the standard of merit set by the school. Everything can be measured by means of some norm. Our life in the physical world is just like the period during which we are preparing ourselves to meet the standard of credits set by the school. We are ever striving to accumulate the achievements of a lifetime. In other words, our life course is measured against the yardstick that determines to what extent we have fulfilled our responsibility. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

Do not digest everything for your own sakes, but rather for the sake of God, your nation, tribe, family and spouse. Self-centered living is fraught with worries. Conversely, altruists

always make friends. If you constantly devote yourselves to the welfare of others to the point of emptying yourselves, you become a vacuum, and the truth will come into you. (203-101, 1990.6.17)

What is the pride of our Unification Church? First is true love and second is True Parents. These terms are found only in the Unification Church, not in the dictionary. Third is true children and fourth is true tribe. These relate to our four main goals. (203-103, 1990.6.17)

4.2. The preciousness of our life on earth

If you are liberated, God will be liberated. If your family is liberated, so is the heavenly family. It is the same with earth and heaven. Accordingly, the biblical statement, “whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven,” is elucidated by the oneness of the dual structure.

Understand the preciousness of the days during which you can make use of your body. They give us our one and only opportunity to use our bodies to resurrect God and the universe and to unite the world. The totality of God and all creation cannot be exchanged for the value of life on earth. Why? Because without humankind existing physically on earth, God and the universe combined together would still be incomplete. Realize how precious the human body is. We cannot trade our physical selves even for the universe. It is in this light that we

understand the biblical verse, “For what will it profit a man if he gains the whole world and forfeits his life? Or what can a man give in exchange for his life?” (91-190, 1977.2.13)

The average lifespan does not exceed eighty years. Within that short space of time allotted to us, we must get a grip on all the historically intertwined realms of goodness that were entangled in history. Realizing the vastness of the realm of goodness with which we are to forge a bond during our brief stay on earth, our mind and conscience must surge urgently forward. If we die we cannot do it. While we yet live, let us find our original homeland and restore the sovereignty of our homeland. Only by serving the heavenly sovereign and living in his nation can we enter God’s Kingdom in heaven. (155-25, 1964.10.6)

The spirit world is infinite and eternal. How shall we manage our affairs in order to go there? We need to put them in order while we are still alive. There will be no other opportunity to straighten things out. A self-centered way of doing this absolutely does not exist. If it did, the Unification Church’s Rev. Moon would never have suffered as he has. (59-50, 1972.7.2)

The way of the Principle presented by the Unification Church is the one and only way to go even after the passage of millennia and tens of millennia. Those failing to fulfill in this way, in their lifetime, will have to make up for it when

they go to the eternal spirit world. (135-296, 1985.12.15)

4.3. Habituality is important

Today, let us renounce the habits of the satanic world and institutionalize God’s new order. (213-19, 1991.1.13)

It is very difficult to break a habit. While living in the satanic world until now, you have cherished self-centered habits; these harden and set like cement, becoming even more deeply ingrained than the addiction Koreans have to kimchi (pickled vegetables), doenjang (soybean paste) and kochujang (thick soybean paste mixed with red pepper).

It is a historical fact. Since the emergence of the devil, our habits have become very deeply rooted. How do we eradicate them? However deep a pit you dig, you cannot get to the root of this serious problem. To get to heaven, one needs to replace all those past habits with God-centered habituality. (213-19, 1991.1.13)

4.4. The standard of life on earth

My life is for the sake of God and the world. Do not think of living for yourselves. Live for God, True Parents and humanity. True love is indispensable for you in forming a four-position foundation with God, True Parents and humanity. They all desire true love. You should become people who can inherit this true universe centered on true love. We need to bear this in mind constantly.

Therefore, we have to evaluate the

degree to which we have lived in conformity to the heavenly standard until now. You should become people who represent humanity, True Parents and God. People who live that way will not be restricted by any borderline from moving freely between the spirit world and anywhere on earth. If you wish to dine together with a thousand friends, such an experience is possible only in a world of love. When God exercised His ability as the Creator, He did so centered on love. In the spirit world, once you connect with true love, you can regulate and create everything. That is our ideal hometown. Unless you make a connection with true love, everything will be in vain. (147-115, 1986.8.31)

4.5. Everything will be recorded through the physical body

If more than two-thirds of your life have been unspeakably miserable, could you erase that? You cannot. These experiences stay with you. (34-139, 1970.8.30)

We need indemnity for restoration. Restoration is also re-creation. You should leave behind a life of value. Some people say to themselves that when they get old they will believe in Jesus, die and then go to heaven, but when we get old it is difficult to rectify anything. Therefore, the younger the better: it is more valuable for you to know the truth at the age of fifteen rather than twenty, and even more so to grow up knowing the truth from infancy.

Is the water inside your bodies pure

or dirty? It would contain sand and pebbles. After heavy seasonal rainfall, rivers and streams become dirty with all manner of refuse floating in them. Likewise, you are full of all kinds of impurities. Thus, you need to go through the stirring and straining processes of a filtration system. Do not be egoistical otherwise there will be blockage. If excessive dirt accumulates, the filter gets clogged up, and the water flow is stopped.

Have you ever thought that you would be inspected by a system like an X-ray machine when you go to the spirit world? God also needs people who have passed through the filter. (97-60, 1978.2.26)

4.6. Life on earth is so important

In the spirit world you will live in a probation realm and wait there for some millennia.

The levels of your Blessed Families are all different, so you go to the place that is consistent with your level and stay there for a long time. Then your ancestors and your sons and daughters will accuse you saying, “Why did you do that? Why didn’t you do better? What is this?” The time you will have to spend in that place will depend on the level of your accomplishments. It is not an easy thing. That is why you have to accomplish on the earth. You have to do everything I tell you.

A bolt requires its corresponding nut to be securely fastened. Only when the nut fits can it be fastened. Do you understand? They have to match.

How important is life on this earth?

It is an instant that comes but once. Compared to eternity, life on earth is but a dot, an extremely short moment. It is insignificant. You have to go beyond your physical life and prepare for the spirit world.

You must always be able to control and conquer everything by standing at the center with such a mainstream philosophy. Without doing so you cannot achieve individual perfection. (207-99, 1990.11.1)

4.7. Using our physical selves to fulfill our portion of responsibility

You have to think about God and True Parents in your life. By doing so, your mind and body can stand within a harmonious, stable and fulfilled sphere through love.

Those who lived in such a way can naturally do the same in the spirit world. There is an expanded internal life on earth. The level of the expansion of your internal life will come out on the surface in the spirit world.

Since love is internalized, God and human beings are like one cell of the body. The spirit world is the world where you become one of those cells. Once you enter into such a state, God will surely come inside your heart. When you call, "God!" He will answer in your heart, "Who is calling me? What is it?" In other words, it's a world in which you live with God.

Therefore, your portion of responsibility is that important. That is why I established the principle of the portions

of responsibility. Whenever you look at yourself in the mirror in the morning, you should consider how you, as a man or woman, are going to fulfill your portion of responsibility. It is a serious matter.

Your five senses will find themselves enraptured in the love gained after accomplishing your portion of responsibility. All your senses are to operate within a substantial realm of love. (218-128, 1991.7.14)

In order to accomplish your portion of responsibility, what should you do? What should you do to become people who can fulfill their portion of responsibility? You should stand in a position to deny everything that was born from the emotional connection to and lineage of Satan. (139-249, 1986.1.31)

What happens when a person goes to the spirit world? He becomes God's body. Adam becomes God's body. This is what Jesus meant when he said, "the Father is in me." The First Corinthians verse, "Do you not know that you are God's temple?" confirms that the body is the holy temple where God dwells; it is His house.

Then, how can you resemble God? When you reach the stage of completion of your portion of responsibility, God dwells within you, creating oneness between you and God. (130-21, 1983.12.11)

Section 5. Blessing and Eternal Life

5.1. Why we need to know about the issue of eternal life

Why are families in this world being destroyed? Why are mothers, fathers and children becoming enemies? It is because there is no true love. The most important thing is eternal life, but people do not know that the spirit world exists. If you knew clearly that you live for eternity, you would not commit a crime even if others told you to. You would not live for yourself even if others told you to. Without knowing this, whether you believe in Christianity or any other religion, you could never go to heaven, God's ideal world. You cannot go there without investing true love and life. (205-261, 1990.9.9)

If our church is armed with the Principle, the issue of eternal life will become clear. If it were not connected to this issue, even a social revolution would be impossible. Nobody would want to fall into circumstances of greater poverty and ruin than those he or she currently lives in.

If we approach things from the perspective of eternal life, however, we can overcome all environmental conditions. That's why religion is so great. The issue of eternal life hinges upon this. All you have to do is firmly establish the concept of eternal life. Until now, religions could not digest or overcome their cultural backgrounds that were intertwined with

habituality. Why not? It was because they could not establish the concept of eternal life.

Why are Christians shaken as their circumstances change? It is because of their concept of eternal life. They have no confidence regarding that issue. As to the question of whether they can lay down their lives in order to overcome their circumstances, we see them backsliding into living mostly to satisfy their present needs and meet their social obligations, all the while experiencing distractions coming from all directions. Unless the proper concept of eternal life is implanted in these people, they will fall away in midcourse. What can do this? Love alone can do this. Only the Unification Church can completely accomplish this.

The path of faith is not preparation for life on earth but for that in the eternal world. People having this conviction can take care of themselves. As people pass the ages of forty and fifty, and the day of their death draws closer, the more serious they become about the issue of eternal life. The older they get, the more serious they become.

Our thinking dims as we grow older, but when the concept of eternal life is implanted, we become more serious with age. Consequently, in the future, only a religious ideology can lead this world. Regardless of the frequently changing circumstances and ups and downs we face in life, as long as we maintain an absolute concept of eternal life, nothing would be a problem.

Therefore, the point is how you can

implant the concept of eternal life. God created Adam and Eve as the objects of His love. There's no doubt about that. Consequently, we should live as objects of God's love. You have to not only talk about it but also actually feel it, and experience it deeply.

Once you come to know how great the power of true love is, you would go this way even if someone told you not to. Therefore, if you can only implant the concept of eternal life, everything will be complete. In doing so, when it makes logical sense, it will reverberate in your mind and your body will be resonating in harmony with it to the same level. Adolescence is when such things happen.

The standard of original nature, as it was before the Fall applies fully before the age of sixteen. Since the years leading up to the age at which Adam and Eve fell were unaffected, the standard of original nature remains intact. Therefore, you should acquaint yourselves with God in your adolescence. In so doing, you will realize your inseparable relationship with Him. For this to happen, the concept of eternal life needs to be implanted. If only this were done, our second generation in the Unification Church would go no other way, even if we told them to. Therefore we must save the world quickly and bring everybody to the heavenly nation. The result becomes your possession. Your rank in the other world will be determined according to the number of people you bring in there. That is why heaven is completely empty now. (230-22, 1992.4.15)

5.2. The way of eternal life

5.2.1. Our lifetime and the issue of eternal life

How long do you think you'll live? Everyone probably thinks they'll live up to the age of about seventy or eighty; they don't think that they'll die before then. You just want everything. Even though you may believe you'll die when you're eighty or a hundred, there's no knowing if you'll die tomorrow or even today. You may think because you're young, you will live at least another forty to fifty years. You may want that. Did God guarantee that to you?

You should think that you might possibly die soon, perhaps within a year. Therefore, you should make all preparations during this short time. You should live with such thoughts. The shorter the time you think you have, the happier you will be, and the less you have to lose. Your sincere preparations during this time become the building blocks of your home for your eternal life. Have you ever loved God with such a short time in mind? You want to become one with Him and love Him, but you can not. God says to you, "Love Me!" If you die after having lived this way, then you will become the master of eternal life.

If you thought that you would die two years later, how serious would you be? You would start visiting cemeteries and attending funeral services. It is absolutely necessary to do this in a life of faith. That is why those who seek to gain their life will lose it and those who seek

to lose their life will gain it. The Principle applies here. If you think of dying for God's will and for heaven during the short time of your life, you will live eternally.

Within the same principle, consider how grateful a man would be who, thinking he would die single and unmarried, received a loving wife before his death? How happy would a man, who died without being married to anyone, be if he were suddenly resurrected and able to marry?

Until what age will you live and die? What would you do if you had to go forth to immediate death under God's order? You should leave something behind that God could praise. Then you would feel that your time is too precious to spend sleeping and eating. You would not have any time to worry even if you wanted to.

With regard to the matters of life and of eternity, you can live your lives with greater value the more you think of life as being short. What value comes from loving an individual, a family and a tribe? It creates a textbook for loving all humankind. It is a textbook for loving everybody in the spirit world that transcends time and space. (102-122, 1978.11.27)

5.2.2. Humankind seeks eternal life

A life of faith consists of seeking the world of eternal life. Faith involves seeking God's eternal love. In order to unite with eternal life along with eternal love, you must seek the final destination where God's joy can be felt as your own;

this is the way of faith. Therefore, the most important matter above all else for an individual who lives a life of faith, is the degree to which he or she can live life with a progressive love and vitality.

The measure of value you have as a human being depends on how much all the sensations you perceive through your five senses exist in relation to life and love. Therefore, we should think again about the matter of whether we have lived in society with vitality and the heart of added love. If you are not standing in such a position, you should know that you are at a standstill or in retreat. (32-18, 1970.6.14)

5.2.3. Eternal life and religion

Human beings have eternal life. Religion has not disappeared from the earth but has expanded its territory throughout the entire world by passing through all kinds of circumstances, including different cultural backgrounds and customs. That is because the central human issue is about eternal life rather than a person's earthly lifetime.

People should live together with the universe during their life. Even though life is short, amounting only to about one hundred years, it does not just disappear at the end of one's life. Once you overcome that boundary line, you can continue to live in a transcendental realm and go beyond the bounds of the global village that once defined our limits.

Although the reality that we have eternal life may be harsh, even if that were not the case, we should proclaim

even an imagined eternal life to sympathize with and help humankind who have lived moaning in the midst of suffering until now. From this we have to infer a form of an ideal nation centered on an imagined God. In this way religion is necessary. Therefore, you have to resolve the matter of God along with the matter of eternal life. All these matters are interconnected. (162-263, 1987.4.17)

5.2.4. Why we should live eternally

As what kind of existence did God create human beings? He created them as the objects of His love who could possess His absolute and unique value. This is an amazing fact. How much value does a person's life have these days? It's only worth a few pennies. Originally, people were not meant to be such worthless beings. Their value was so precious that life could not be exchanged even for the entire universe.

The backbone of everything in the literary world today is love. People are born from, live in, and die in love. However, they do not just disappear. Since God, the subject being, is eternal, unchanging and unique, human beings, when they come to stand in the position of an object of love in front of Him, can also live eternally. The theory of eternal life originated from this point; it did not begin from life. (142-143, 1986.3.8)

What kind of person is a true person? It is a person who can receive love completely in the position of God's child by becoming one with Him inside and out.

We can say that the way of life of such people is the way of a true life. People, whoever they are, desire the best. When you go and reach the highest position, God belongs to you, and you belong to Him. Then, you become God's child and you become God Himself and thus, even the universe belongs to you.

If there is something that God loves and treasures most, would God have created it to throw away after He spends one day, ten years, or a hundred years with it or would it to be with Him eternally? God created it to be together with Him eternally. So it is with humankind.

People should live eternally because they are the object partners of the absolute God who can feel joy from them in absolute love. If God were to just have a liking for them for one or two days, ten years, or a hundred years and then throw them away, it would not be love. The more you love someone, the more you want to be with that person. Was there not a man who remained single for life after his beloved wife died, always carrying her handkerchief? Nehru of India lost his wife when she was young. He wore a rose the rest of his life because his wife loved roses.

Then, when God created His most precious only son and daughter, do you think He created them to perish after a hundred years or so? No, and therefore it is a fundamental principle that human beings live eternally. In order to live eternally, we must stand on the foundation of an action where stronger power can be emitted. Therefore, as more days pass and the more love is given and received,

rather than being exhausted, the power of love becomes stronger and greater. Life will not end only in happiness but can expand to an unlimited happiness. Such a world is the nation that we idealize and where God dwells.

Do you wish for eternal life? Although perhaps vaguely, you wish for eternal life. If you have something precious, would you bring it with you when you seek refuge or not? You would bring it with you. Do you want to be proud of it or not? You would want to be proud of it. Will you stop being proud of it after a day or two? No. When you are about to die, you will want to leave it to your descendants for eternity. That is the same for God.

If God is an eternal, absolute being, the object partner He can love should also live eternally. That is why people have longed for an eternal life since time immemorial. Therefore, God the Absolute Being, cannot help but look for a loving son and daughter who possess the value of eternal life. (39-342, 1971.1.16)

We human beings resemble God as His masterpiece. Since God is eternal and because we also should have an eternal nature, our heart does not become old. Therefore, human beings should live eternally. Only when they live eternally can they have the value of existence as that masterpiece.

Therefore, human beings are the lords of all creation. Spirit comes from here. Human beings should live eternally. Therefore, we cannot think that our existence ends after we live for about eighty years. (159-279, 1968.5.19)

5.2.5. Living for the sake of eternal life

People are all living their lives in their own way. Living means your everyday life. Lifetime means your entire life. Furthermore, religious people use the words eternal life. Eternal life means not a lifetime but a life that continues eternally. It is important how you connect your life course with eternal life. Doing so is your lifelong responsibility. A lifetime is determined through linking each day to the next. Your entire life is the sum of the continuous days in your life.

Where is it that the content of your entire life is determined to be valuable? It is not determined after you have gone through all your life. Your daily life, day by day, determines it. Therefore, you have to live life well. What exactly is the meaning of living life well? It entails meaningfully living the days that represent the entire course of your life. When you say that you lived life well today, it means that it was a memorable day in your life, one that you can be proud of. When you say that you lived well, that day would surely be the most valuable day in your entire life course. If there were a day that you could live valuably, it would be an unforgettable day in your entire life. (197-186, 1990.1.14)

5.2.6. What is the theory of eternal life?

God is wise. If He had not established the ideology for love, He would be alone and lonely; He would be a god

who could not feel joy, anger, sorrow or happiness. God, who lost this absolute love, has stood in a serious, appalling and absolutely miserable position that no one has ever experienced throughout history. No one could ever comfort Him. God is not satisfied by reproducing an ideal form and shape of His dreams and then resurrecting His original son and daughter who are His desire. He should be able to decorate the ideal more brilliantly and express it beautifully as He travels long distances while embracing that ideal. That is how He created the entire universe. (204-100, 1990.7.1)

When the atmosphere falls one hundred percent into an absolute low pressure area, a high pressure area is automatically created which brings about a circulatory movement. God is the King of wisdom.

The theory of eternal life is logically established because eternal circulation begins through that principle of automatic circulation. When you invest, invest, and invest more, the theory of eternal life will begin. Those who live for others will not perish. (204-106, 1990.7.1)

When God looks for a partner of absolute love, that object partner will certainly be humankind; thus, we have the ancient adage, "Among all creation, human beings are most precious." This brings about the logic that the partner of love who unites with the creator's eternal love lives forever.

Eternal life is a natural product of this logic. Eternal life begins from here.

The problem of how to establish a theory of eternal life based on the relationship of love sets up an extremely precious debate in religion. Eternal life cannot be found in either the man or woman. Eternal life is not found in God, but in His love. (218-210, 1991.7.29)

5.2.7. The most important issue of eternal life

Today's Christians say that if you believe in Jesus you will attain eternal life. To live eternally one must carry on with a continuous action. In order to walk the path of life eternally, the circulation system such as the veins and arteries of the heart should function normally; the nervous system and all the actions of the cerebrum and cerebellum should also function normally. This requires a tremendous amount of consumption. (121-172, 1982.10.24)

When you go to bed in the evening after taking off your shoes, are you confident that you will be there to put them on again the next morning? No matter how busy you say you are, nothing in this world is more important than the issue of eternal life. There is no quest in this world more serious than to resolving the problem of eternal life on this world. (10-249, 1960.10.21)

5.2.8. Ultimately, human beings must return to eternal life

You should dissolve the anguish of the Fall by establishing the way of True

Parents' love, this new wave and tide, and establish a family of true love over which God can reign. Only then can you go straight to heaven. The rails of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven must be the same. A train can run only when the rails are the same. In the same way, the rails on earth and in the heavenly world must be the same.

The path connecting God's Kingdom on earth with His kingdom in heaven is the path of true love. Consequently, the path an individual takes and the path a family takes should all be connected and their directions consistent with each other.

Therefore, everything a person does in his lifetime is permanently fastened to his rear end as a record of his performances done for the sake of true love. Thus, when a person goes to the spirit world, he naturally comes to dwell at the level corresponding to the meritorious achievements he left behind in his lifetime. (211-287, 1990.12.30)

5.2.9. Faith and the issue of eternal life

How do you live eternally? Christians say that you can attain eternal life and be saved by believing in Jesus but that makes no sense. Only through love can you be saved. From the viewpoint of God's principles of creation, only a true person is God's partner in love. Therefore, if someone has true love, he must be able to live eternally. Once you enter the realm of that love, whether you are in the spirit world or on earth, you will come to

know where you should live.

If a large ship sailing across the ocean faces the danger of destruction, the rats inside the ship try to escape to dry land. Even though they are nothing but small animals, they can distinguish which is the right way to take and go in that direction when faced with matters of life and death.

How would it be in the case of human beings who should be the lords of all creation? Why have they become the way they are? It was because of the Fall. How will you remove the mask of the Fall or free yourself from the devil's love, life, and lineage?

To free yourself means to break away from something. It means to completely break away from and stand in an autonomous position with no relation to Satan. (215-53, 1991.2.6)

A mother in her nineties will tell her seventy year-old son when he goes out of the house to be careful of cars, have a nice trip and come back safely. Even if he is seventy, she will still say this to him before he goes anywhere. She can say such things to him. She will continue to say this everyday until she reaches the ripe old age of ninety. She will not get tired of saying it even if she were to continue for eternity.

What is the motivating power behind this? It is love. Even in the fallen world, parental love is like that. What would life be like if we belonged to God's love that fills the original world? When we achieve that state, the realm belonging to the true object of the God can be estab-

lished for the first time. When we come to know that God's love is eternal and unchanging, we can validate the theory of eternal life centering on our human love. We live eternally centering on love.

(143-280, 1986.3.20)

5.2.10. Unificationists and eternal life

I intend to have the Unification Church members go through many hardships. They do not run away even though I make them go through hardships. Why do they not escape? It is because they know there is eternal life. The reason that they cannot leave the Unification Church is because there is eternal life. (204-82, 1990.7.1)

People all have desire. They all want to be a son or daughter of God. They do not want to be a grandchild or God's son-in-law; they want to be a son or daughter of God. The family is where anyone can achieve their desire. (221-23, 1991.10.20)

5.2.11. The concept necessary for eternal life

You should live with the attitude that I am someone who has eternal life. I am someone who practices true love. Whatever you do, you should think that it is for the sake of eternal life and for training yourself for eternal life. You always need the concept of eternal life and true love. You will need it eternally. (216-125, 1991.3.9)

5.3. Love and eternal life

5.3.1. Eternal life is directly connected with love

We want eternal life. We want eternal life, but what is it that does not change? It is love. All other things change according to their environment. So why does love not change? Love does not change because it is the center of all forces of life and because it occupies the central position of the ideal necessary condition. The center does not disappear before all its surroundings disappear. Since love is the center of the universe, anything that unites with that love can remain as long as God remains. (157-267, 1967.4.10)

5.3.2. True love and eternal life

What is true love? When you marry, you want your marriage partner to be better than you are. All parents wish for their children to be better than they are. Who do they resemble in this? They resemble God. God wishes for His object of love to be better than He.

If the absolute God is the father of humankind, can that father order His sons and daughters to absolutely do something while He Himself has not absolutely done it before? He cannot. Based on the view of this principle, that God wishes for His object of love to be better than Him, human beings have the greatest value. Centering on love, they have a higher value than God. That is why your mind desires the highest things. This is not impossible. It would

be equally possible for all human beings. It would be possible if the Fall had not occurred.

Human beings were to observe, administer and lead the universe from a lofty and exalted position. They were not to be dragged around and made to obey. Your mind, a liberated mind is like that. No one wants to be controlled. This is equally true for everybody.

Once you acquire the position of true love, you can go freely to God's position and to His throne in the heavenly nation. You can become God's friend. God created humankind for the sake of love. Therefore, since God is eternal and absolute, human beings have eternal life themselves. We automatically come to this logic. For this reason, true love is eternal. To attain eternal life, you must live in that realm of true love. (211-272, 1990.12.30)

Through true love, eternal life is possible. It is because the beginning of creation, the motivation, process and goal, and everything thereafter can be completed centered on love. Through a process, results come forth. The perfection of one's mind and body is fundamentally possible through true love. It is only love that bears the fruit of the ideal. There is nothing but true love. God also exists forever because of true love. Eternal life is connected through love. Therefore you must live centering on the environment of love in order to create an environment of eternal life. To attain the substantial realm of love, we must have a substantial experience of love. (218-134, 1991.7.14)

5.3.3. True love is absolutely necessary

Where does God exist in the spirit world? He exists at the absolute center, the center of love. That love is the true love which takes the shortest perpendicular path. First of all, you have to know God. Second, you have to know eternal life, and third, you must know true love. This is an investment of more than one hundred percent. Eternal life exists where there is an investment of more than one hundred percent. Eternal life cannot exist without true love. Those who do not attain eternal life cannot meet God. (205-128, 1990.7.29)

How will we bring order to the world from now forward? The world will be brought to order firstly through altruism, secondly through true love and thirdly through eternal life.

What is true love? It requires an investment of more than all of one's life. True love cannot exist where such investment is not made. It materializes from a place where an investment greater than one's life is made. Without true love coming into being, eternal life cannot exist. This is because you were all born from satanic blood, from Satan's lineage. Hence the biblical injunction, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the greatest and first commandment." What does this mean? It means to love with all your heart and with all your will and with all your life. This is the First Commandment.

The Second Commandment is, “You shall love your neighbor as yourself.” What does it mean to love your neighbor as yourself? It means to love with your life. You have to invest your whole life. You have to invest your whole life because otherwise, first, you would not be able to make Satan surrender and second, you would not be able to free yourself from satanic circumstances and third, you would not be able to rid yourself of the satanic lineage. Even if you are able to free yourself from satanic circumstances, there is nothing you can do about the satanic lineage. True love goes beyond life.

Men and women were born to live altruistically. Men were born for the sake of women. This is the absolute truth; the eternal truth. This is so for the sake of true love. That’s how it is for both men and women. People say they wish they could be united eternally as couples. Then what will they do once they are one? They will occupy God. They cannot do that without true love.

Who is to be the owner in your home? One who lives one’s entire life for the sake of the whole family will be the central figure representing God and the parents. One who has a hundred friends and lives for their sake during one’s lifetime will earn the respect of those hundred people and will be their center. So an owner who eternally lives for the sake of others in the eternal world will be the eternal owner.

That person is God. Incidentally, God is our father and therefore He declares that He wishes to be together with us

and the entire universe. There eternal life can be found. Eternal life does not exist in any other place. The scripture, “He who seeks to gain his life will lose it, but he who is willing to lose his life for my sake will gain eternal life” means that you have to overcome death. Without overcoming death you cannot truly live. (205-258, 1990.9.9)

5.3.4. The world after death is related with love

Where do we ultimately go? To the spirit world. We call it the world after death, but it is not the world after death. It cannot become the world after because it is a world related with love. Since that world is related with love, it is not the world after death. Since it began centering on true love, when we come to practice true love, here now is the spirit world. That is why love is great. (144-198, 220, 1986.4.24)

The directions of up and down, front and back, and left and right can only be harmonized through spherical movement. Without harmony between the vertical and horizontal, harmony cannot be created. Unity could not come about. Only love can bring about unification. Thus, the Unification Church argues the case for a unified ideal world based on true love because this conclusion conforms to the viewpoint of the Principle. (144-219, 1986.4.24)

God is trying to guide humankind. Even God breathes. He inhales love. The

universe continues for eternity centering on love. Eternal life is found in love. Even love breathes. Since the pulse of the universe is such, a man or a woman cannot say, "Ah! I hate it!" In order to be synchronized with the rhythm, they should love each other and go in the same direction. Everything should be aligned towards a single direction centering on God. (201-191, 1990.4.1)

5.3.5. Eternal life comes only by living for the sake of others

The formula course for eternal life is the same for grandfathers and grandmothers, as well as descendants thousands of years from now, and even to the spirits who are in the spirit world. Only those who lived for the sake of others can pass through to eternal life. (203-192, 1990.6.24)

5.4. Blessing and spirit world

5.4.1. The power of love

Both the spirit world and the physical world operate through love. The environmental conditions automatically act in concert with one another centering on true love. (185-19, 1989.1.1)

What are the qualifications for people in the past and the present to be eternal? What is the necessary factor for all the desires in our world? It is love; not just any love but true love. True love forms a ninety degree angle between the vertical and the horizontal anywhere. It

must fit into all homes, whether oriental or western, northern or southern types, regardless of skin color, cultural or religious background. That is true love. (180-86, 1988.8.7)

Among the many people living in this world today, there are not that many who understand the meaning of the Blessing taught by the Unification Church. The Unification Church coined the term Blessing and has performed blessing ceremonies using this term. In the future, humanity cannot go to heaven without going through the gate of the Blessing.

Many people believe in the established churches. But even the established churches themselves cannot go to heaven unless they go through the gate of the Blessing. If I tell them this, the established churches complain that Rev. Moon of the Unification Church is self-righteous. Nevertheless, fallen human beings must surely go through the Blessing taught by the Unification Church. Even though they oppose it, the Blessing is a matter of great importance that should be dealt with by connecting the spirit world with the physical world.

Today the people who believe in ordinary religions think that salvation means individual salvation. It means that they think they will enter heaven if they just have faith individually. Yet based on God's original ideal, people are not to go to heaven alone, but rather as a loving couple together with their loving family. (143-234, 1986.3.19)

5.4.2. The spirit selves of husband and wife

We are the group that seeks the ideal of love. Therefore, we have to implant the ideal of love in the horizontal realm in order to stand as spokespersons for the spirit world. We should plant it as a seed. We can grow bigger through our give and take action centering on the heart of love. A couple bearing the fruit of love in this way will enter the spirit world becoming one body with God in the realm of His eternal love. (144-224, 1986.4.24)

You have much to learn of the logic of true love. When we look at the faces of the ardent members of the Unification Church, they look like they are in their forties, even though they have reached fifty. Some even look like they're only in their thirties. That's why, the more you love, the younger you become.

Our earthly outer shell ages, yet the more we exchange conjugal love, the more our spirit selves are rejuvenated. Let me elaborate further: the longer we live in love, our inner selves, our spirit selves, mature to become handsome men and beautiful women. We are to discard our outer shell like clothing, but what would we do if the shell got younger and clung on to us? Our outer shells begin to malfunction and become useless, but our inner cores become firm and are then transformed into beautiful heirs of the future like autumn chestnuts. When fall comes, the once-hard chestnut ripens while the bur softens

and splits, allowing the chestnut to fall. It's the same for us. (164-101, 1987.4.26)

5.4.3. Marriage and spirit world

Christianity teaches people to love God, but this is a very vague concept. In the Bible Jesus said, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the great and first commandment. And the second is like it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself". All you need are these two commandments. Before you love God you have to love the food you eat, love all things of creation, and love your body.

Your first parents are the parents who gave birth to you. Your second parent is planet earth, this earth. The earth supplies you with all the essential elements for your physical growth. The earth is the second parent of your physical body. Through the second parent, you return to your third parent which means our physical death. However, you cannot go to the third parent as you are. In order to return to the third parent you have to resemble God, who is the original parent.

Then, why do we marry? It is so that we resemble God. God is the uniformly combined being of dual characteristics. Since man and woman are the divided expression of God's dual characteristics, they have to unite as one body, become like seeds and return to God's position of original character. However, because we must go the way of love in order to be linked to that seed, we must be born in

love, set love as our goal while growing, live centering on love, and walk this path in order to return to love. You will go off in the wrong direction unless you follow the path centering on the goal of living for the sake of others. (138-97, 1986.1.19)

5.4.4. The position of Blessed Families in the spirit world

We Unification Church members are sure about the existence of the spirit world. We do not just believe it, we know it. Based on our many experiences, we cannot deny this... Up to this point where the Unification Church has established its present worldwide foundation, it has undergone a process with many spiritual experiences. Therefore, Unification Church members came to be in a position where they cannot deny the existence of the spirit world.

The spirit world is a world built centering on the absolute God. If that absolute God exists, He is the origin of the universe. There is nothing that does not come from Him. Because everything belongs to God, all that belongs to Him shares the same feelings with Him and lives in connection with Him. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

Satan does not exist in the realm where such love is achieved. Therefore, everyone in the satanic world loves centering on themselves. In this world, heaven is not number one, but rather the self. This began from the denial of heaven and earth. If, however we recognize heaven and earth, and unite under

the equal love of the parents, we know that Satan cannot dominate us. That is the original position of Adam. We must recover that standard. (140-201, 1986.2.9)

Blessed couples should become the talk of their villages, just like I am wherever I go. The villagers should say, "We are so grateful to have that couple in our village. All the men and women like the wife. The children like her too." Be like that. If you cannot, you have to come back to earth from the spirit world. In order to come back you need to get my signature. Do you think that a Blessed Family can come back to earth as they please? It will be possible only after I pray for them. That is why those who went to the spirit world until now are in bondage. All the Blessed Families from the Unification Church in the spirit world are in bondage. Therefore, the cause of the problem resides on the earth. (140-201, 1986.2.9)

5.4.5. The Blessing is a promise

When receiving the Blessing, Unification Church couples pledge to live as eternal families. I am the one who governs eternal families and the eternal nation. I am setting the standard of families in the eternal nation. Those of you who keep your promise can inherit that family, as well as that eternal nation. (205-359, 1990.10.2)

5.4.6. The glory of the Blessing

What should a true woman be like?

She should do what the true man asks of her. If she serves the family and the tribe, then all her neighbors will applaud her.

Why do you all like me? Because I go through suffering to save you and liberate all of humanity. Unless I suffer, you cannot receive the Blessing, even if you

wait for billions of years in the spirit world. I made the impossible possible through my suffering and enlarged the domain of this precious Blessing. This is something glorious and brilliant for the spirit world and for the physical world.

(162-67, 1987.3.27)

CHAPTER TWO

Death and the Spirit World

Section 1. The Inevitable Path of Our Life

1.1. The body is far from eternal life

The earth also breathes and moves. Your cells breathe as well. Do you want to live eternally on earth or do you want to live eternally in a place where you become an invisible entity of love? You should live eternally in a world where you become an invisible entity of love. Even when God wants to reveal Himself, you cannot see Him with your physical body. That's why you need a spirit self.

God is the center of the invisible spirit. Therefore, He wants to give human beings, who are His counterparts, everything from the eternal realm of the ideal that He created. (111-111, 1981.2.1)

1.2. How the majority of people live

We are headed for a certain destination whether we know it or not, even as we move and even as we rest. Not just you, but this nation, this world and even heaven and earth are headed there as well. This is an undeniable fact.

Where will you go after this life? This is an important issue that people must resolve. Religions and philosophies

arose historically to do this. You, therefore, cannot deny that you, too, are all caught up and driven by this destiny.

That being always the case, where are our bodies and minds trying to go? Further, where are our lives inclined towards and where are our hearts trying to go? Our wishes, hopes, and ideals...Where are they trying to go? Even if we cannot resolve these issues, we are destined to go in any case.

This body will see its end when it is buried in the ground on the day we die. If so, will this mind, this life, this heart, this ideal, and even this hope be buried together the day the body is buried? To answer this, we should present detailed contents, solutions and a definite and purposeful perspective.

Saints, sages and numerous founders of religions, stopped on their paths of life, interrupted the concerns of their minds and the inclinations of their hearts, and asked themselves where they were going, as they struggled to resolve this issue. They came forth to resolve this issue, but to this day no one could confidently claim, "My body has gone to such a place. My mind, my heart, my life, and my ideals have hastened there; hence, all beings in heaven and earth should go there." (8-194, 1959.12.20)

Religious people hope for the end of this fallen world which originated from private desires. Over the millennia, religions have eagerly awaited a public world – a single, unified world of peace.

How should religious people live? They should shorten this historical path and link it to the world and to the cosmos. The life after this accomplishment is far more interesting than the pleasures of conjugal life. Such a family is a liberated family. It cannot help but become an absolute family.

Walking the streets of Myungdong in Seoul, one sees young couples being affectionate. For whom are they doing that? They say they do that to enjoy their youth, which they have but once. That's fine, but who is the owner of enjoyment? This is a serious question. How long can you enjoy life? You do so from your twenties, but it will not last after you pass your sixties, seventies, and eighties.

Yet the way of the Unification Church is different. For what purpose do we eat? For the sake of the world and to abolish this evil world. We see in order to clean up this evil world – not to become a part of the evil side but to defeat it. How we hear, think, walk and act is different from the secular world. (36-71, 1970.11.15)

God would not be the Absolute Being if He had created people to live for just a few days and perish. He created them as precious beings that He wants to keep seeing and cherish eternally.

We know that we are the object partners God can derive joy from. As He is eternal, we must also be eternal. The eter-

nal God relates with an eternal world.

However, there are many people who have lived thinking, "I've lived up to eighty. That will do, and when I die, that's the end of it." Yet in the course of history, there were people who pondered the question of immortality. They wondered if there was any way to live eternally without dying. The more people held on to this ideal, the more they thought and asked themselves, "What's the meaning of life? Why are people born and then go away like travelers?" and they concluded, "Life is suffering. It is like the coming and going of grass." Yet, if they could live forever, there would be no need for such worries. (39-228, 1971.1.15)

1.3. Death is inevitable

One day we will go to the spirit world. There is no doubt about that. People visiting Korea land at Gimpo Airport, but that does not mean they have traveled in Korea. From Gimpo Airport, where do we go? Do we go to South Jeolla Province or South Gyeongsang Province or Pyeong-an Province? From Pyeong-an Province, where do we go? To a county. From there, where next? A township. What is next? A village. From there, we must go to a neighborhood. This is not easy. If people cannot determine their dwelling place, what is the value of success in social life? That is a problem.

If God orders me to come, even tomorrow night, no matter how great I may be today, I have no choice but to go. However loudly I might protest, I would have to go. I will go while pro-

testing loudly, but only after speaking the right words. I must present the way that the nation and the world must go. It will be my death if I fail to do so. (177-41, 1988.5.15)

1.4. God is the owner of life

Who is the origin of life? Not I. Both the origin and the purpose of life must transcend me. My life did not originate from my parents, society, a people or nation but from the transcendent absolute God. The motive must be firmly connected to the transcendent motive that stands in the absolute position. It should not be linked to historical relational factors, environmental relational factors, or social factors. Only when you link your origin to the transcendent cause, the transcendent purpose, can you extricate yourself, make a leap, and transcend. You must link your life to the transcendent motive; it does not begin with yourself.

It began with the absolute God. When you link yourself to the transcendent motive, even if you die, it will be within a transcendent process because of God's will. (36-63, 1970.11.15)

People don't live for millennia or centuries. All of us die within a century or so. Among our numerous ancestors who died at various times throughout the innumerable historical ages, if there had been any whose thoughts were motivated by public-spiritedness meeting with universal approval, they would have bequeathed a legacy lasting a mil-

lennium even if they lived less than a century. Instead, they all lived selfishly and perished. They brought everything to ruin.

Such a lifestyle causes problems. What is the biggest problem here? It is the question of how to replace an egocentric system of evaluation and orientation with one that serves a higher purpose. It is about how to shift the emphasis from self-centeredness toward that which can benefit the greater good.

We must, therefore, reverse the way of individualism and self-interest. To do so requires resources and action.

If you were wearing your one and only change of clothing, you would fight tooth and nail to stop anyone trying to take it off you. Let's say you had changes of clothing for each of the four seasons. If it is spring, and people are dressed in winter wear, then bring them spring clothing and tell them, "That's winter wear. Take it off!" If others are wearing spring clothing in summer, bring them summer clothing and tell them to change. Those people didn't see the need. They were unaware of the existence of a replacement of greater value. (200-90, 1990.2.24)

On the earth we have parents, teachers and relatives. We have ways to establish such relationships on the earth, but not in the spirit world.

In the spirit world, everyone practices God-centered public-spiritedness. All positions are differentiated. Thus, those above cannot descend below, and those below cannot easily ascend above.

Originally we were supposed to go to the spirit world only after achieving perfection on earth. Once we enter the next world, that's it. There is no doubt that we will die.

Our life course is too short. Life is too short. Even a lifespan of eighty years is too short. It is less than eight hours in spirit world time. From the perspective of eternity, it is even less than that. Therefore, the power of true love is great. The speed of true love is so great as to be beyond our understanding. (205-65, 1990.7.7)

Section 2. Understanding Death

2.1. The meaning of the Korean word *toraganda*

There is no doubt that the spirit world exists. It surely exists, and since we were born from the spirit world, we must return there.

The Korean word *toraganda* (literally “to return,” but meaning “to die”) is interesting. To where do we return? Not to a cemetery. We return to our place of origin. The place of our departure is not a cemetery. It means to return across the vast expanses of history, even beyond its origin.

To return as a human being does not mean to be born and to return as a Korean. Someone who dies as a Korean does not return on that path as one. We return to the original world that brought forth the ancestors of humankind. What does that mean? As there is a Creator, we will return to the place where that Creator is. That is where we originated, so it

is there that we return.

The universe is engaged in circular motion: when the snow covering the mountains melts, it flows down through small valleys and into the ocean through many streams and rivers. Later it enters the ocean where it evaporates and returns to complete its cycle.

Everything circulates. When one returns, where does one return to? We wish to return to a place where we can be higher and better. No one wants to get smaller. However, all the laws of motion of the natural world dictate that things diminish through action. When we roll something, it does not roll eternally. First it rolls rapidly, and then it decelerates and finally stops. (141-269, 1986.3.2)

2.2. The place to which we must go

We live in this world, yet it is not the only world that exists. There is also the spirit world. This world and the spirit world should not be two separate worlds; they should be integrated.

Then where is the place in which we are to go to and live? Of course, while living physically on earth we are proceeding toward the eternal world. Ordinarily, people are simply born into this world, pass through youth, reach their prime, enter old age and end their life like the setting sun.

Yet those who know of the spirit world realize that a lifetime is but a fleeting moment compared to eternal life after death. That being so, our lifetime serves to prepare us to welcome the world of eternity. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

2.3. The day we pass on is a precious day

If a global unified world had been formed in which Adam's birthday, his wedding day, and the day of his return were commemorated, the human race that commemorated those days would have been a unified brotherhood of one people. That is to say, they would have become a people that lived in one world. If that had happened, all the customs of Adam's life would have been inherited in the history of humanity, and the culture formed at that time would have been inherited eternally. (31-230, 1970.6.4)

2.4. The spiritual connection of life and death

However hard you may try to avoid death, you will die when your time comes. People enter the spirit world in different states. Some go there after living to a ripe old age while others die untimely deaths. Among the latter are those who die due to punishment and those who die to indemnify the sins of their people and the world.

If three prominent young people in a village die, good fortune will come to that village. If three promising youths of a clan die, good fortune will come to that clan. In other words, indemnity must be paid. It applies everywhere. The principle of causality operates everywhere.

If God set up someone in a central position with a value equal to that of a thousand people and let him walk the path of death, and if those one thousand

people are inspired by his grace and virtue so that they aim to live for his sake and follow his way of life, their entire race will enter the same blessed realm as he. The reason people try to discover the thoughts of patriots and sages and follow them is to enter the same realm of their blessing.

Last year, several members went to the spirit world. This year, several more will go there. Although I have not talked about it, I know of this already. Why does this happen? Because when we go up one stage, we cannot avoid paying indemnity. (33-10, 1970.7.28)

Among those born on earth, there are people who live with hope and people who live without being able to have hope. Yet there are two kinds of hope: humanistic hope and God-centered hope. From the day of our birth, we grow up thinking that our mother's bosom is the best thing there is, but when we leave our mother's bosom and come to have friends, we think that friends are the best thing. Nevertheless, we end up parting even from our friends.

As we grow older, neither loving parents, nor a loving spouse nor loving children can completely satisfy our hopes.

People hope for many things, but eventually all these hopes vanish. We have hopes for our family, our country, or even the world. However, as we age, our hopes fade away.

Among those who live on earth, there are not many who live with the firm conviction that the hope they have been proud of, their entire hope, the hope

they were unable to live apart from, is worth losing their lives over. People are destined to have to fight and go beyond death after living life as it is known.

People entertain all kinds of hope in their lives. Yet when they face death in the end and pass away, they abandon all the hopes they had fostered. They wander about seeking new hope, wishing to live today and tomorrow. When they encounter death, though, all their hopes fade away and they fall into despair as they set out on their final path.

From their own perspective, people seem to have hope, but they are unable to have a hope by which they can go over the summit of death. They disappear without having such a hope. Are we to die understanding this to be the pattern of life, or will we seek a hope that can last, laughing even in the face of death? These are very important questions that all people on earth have to think about today.

All things of this world will pass away. Our families, nations, and even the world itself will pass away. Ideologies and philosophies will pass away. What will remain? It is the hope with which we can fight and win over death. Without such a hope, we might as well call ourselves failures in life.

On the other hand, there is a group of people who, from their birth, reject all hopes that secular people desire and all humanistic things, and live embracing the heavenly hope, an eternal hope.

Heaven made limitless efforts to enable humanity, living with their earthly, humanistic hopes, to go over

the peak of death with a new hope and to live with regard to the eternal world. Therefore, people who live a life of faith should not live embracing earthly hope, but should live dreaming of the eternal world of hope that can even conquer death. (6-43, 1959.3.22)

2.5. Death in relation to the value of life

The word “death” invites understanding of the meaning of life. Who knows the value of life very well? Those who seek to live do not. Those who seek to fathom the value of life while clinging onto God at the crossroads of life and death understand. (74-242, 1974.12.31)

In today’s world, there are many people who commit suicide by taking sleeping pills or in other ways. Do more women commit suicide or more men? More women. Why? Women tend to have a one-track mind.

However ugly a man might be, he is able to approach a problem from different perspectives. Women see only one way out of a problem, but men avoid death by finding viable alternatives. As such, they have a lower suicide rate than women. (222-69, 1991.10.28)

2.6. Death is a process to link three worlds

It is only natural that we would aspire to resemble God. God also wants His sons and daughters to resemble Him. That is why we want to resemble God

and He wants to take us with Him. We are groping for the way to make this possible. Therefore, people must be reborn into a body that enables them to resemble God. Both God and humankind are eagerly awaiting the day of rebirth. Such a day is necessary. What is it? It is the day of our death.

That being the case, should people welcome death or not? They should welcome it. When asked what the purpose of death is, we should answer, "We will die for the sake of God's true love." We discard our physical bodies to participate in the realm of activity of God's infinite love and for the sake of God's world of love.

Death leads to birth in God's love, but in this world, people clamor in their death throes, "Oh, I'm dying!" Death is the moment you can welcome the joy you feel by being able to leave the realm of limited love and enter the realm of infinite love. Therefore, the moment of death is the moment of your second birth.

Then, would God be joyful about the day of birth of your physical body, or would He be joyful about the hour you are born as a son who is to act for the sake of love in the second, infinite world? You might wonder why I talk about such things. You cannot establish a relationship with God without liberating yourself from the fear of death. (116-172, 1982.1.1)

Human beings go through the stages of formation, growth, and completion. We go through the realm of water

in our mother's womb, then the realm of the planet earth, and finally the aerial realm in heaven. In other words, people go through three periods: the period of water in the womb, the period of being born and living a hundred years on this earth, and then the period of flying in the aerial world. (116-174, 1982.1.1)

People are born from the depths of water. The period in the womb is the period of existence in water. When the fetus is inside the mother's womb, it is floating in water. It needs to draw in and expel water as it lives under water. Therefore, it lives by way of a hose connected to its stomach.

How is a fetus nourished? It is supplied through the navel. Its navel functions as a mouth. So, we should not be disdainful of our navel. Pat your navel and say, "Belly button, you took pains for me in the past." If you pat your navel many times, you'll improve your health. Do that. If you do that a lot, you'll become healthy. Even when you sleep in a cold room, if you cover your navel, you won't get diarrhea. During your time in the womb, your navel functioned as your mouth. The breathing organ then moves up from the navel. What's the next mouth? It is this one. It continues to go up.

Then what must we do with the umbilical cord that is attached to the navel? We must cut it off. By analogy, in the world of air, the spirit self is attached to the physical self like the embryo in the womb and feeds off the physical body. When the physical body grows old, the

spirit self comes out and discards the physical body. When the embryo is to be born, it is born on the earth where it becomes the object of love to its mother and father. Likewise, the spirit self must be reborn as a person who can relate to the eternal God, who is its spiritual Father. This is in accordance with fundamental principles and laws.

The earthly world is where the embryo can become friends with its father and mother after it is born. People are born in the earthly world where they can share love with their mother and father. Likewise, they must be born in the spirit world, where they can share love with God, the Parent, by whom they can connect with the infinite spirit world. (299-69, 1999.2.4)

We have the period of water, then the period of land and the period for flying. How long have people today waited to see a flying human? Such a person would be the world's greatest attraction. (49-284, 1971.10.17)

Those who breathe in love on the earth are not dead but alive. When they breathe in the mother's womb, they do so through a pipe-like device. Though they are alive, when they destroy the placenta connected to their navel and come out, they rise to a new, higher-dimensional world. Air is supplied on a higher dimension. They come out receiving a supply of air.

What will you develop after coming out of the womb? It is not air but love; you receive elements of love. You should

not live just to eat, for that is to be dying. Drinking water and living in that way, it is all like filling a bag, a water bag. They are all part of being on the path to death. It is a secondary existence. What should you be filled with during your life on earth? You must form a new character of love during this period. (139-214, 1986.1.31)

What you need on earth is love. Why do you call a child who lives without parental love an orphan? Because the child does not have the love that enables it to be eternally connected to the spirit world. Therefore, those unmarried people who live alone are pitiful. (139-214, 1986.1.31)

Death means to inherit the elements of love after the destruction of the physical organ through which the body has been engaging in the second type of respiration. Love is invisible. Your internal self is growing through parental love and conjugal love. That is why, just as an embryo is required to grow in order to be normal in the womb, in the same manner the baby must grow properly on the earth, as God's laws require. (299-69, 1999.2.4)

Dragonflies swim in the water during their larval stage at first, then come up to the earth and creep about for a while. Then, by flying around, they prey on bugs that they never would have imagined eating when they were creeping on the surface. They flutter about freely in this universe, thinking that it is their stage.

There are many insects that go through three stages of life. Insects have wings in general. They go through their life living in the water, on land and in the air. Yet do human beings who are called the lord of creation have wings? We have a set of wings of a higher dimension. Death is the blessed gateway to our second birth. (299-71, 1999.2.4)

What is the meaning of death? Earthly life, the time of living in air, parallels the time of swimming in the womb. We are living in a wrapping cloth of air. Death itself is not unique, but only our rebirth into the third life. That moment of transition is what we call death. (49-286, 1971.10.17)

2.7. Things to do before we die

2.7.1. Crossing the last border

We will all die once in our lifetime. We must pass over even if we have to brave the fiercest storm. There is no value in doing well most of the way and then collapsing before crossing the finish line. What will you do standing on the border? You did well in joining the Unification Church. You all are such a motley crew, but it is good that you joined. Even if we run with our mind totally focused, we cannot be confident we will make it all the way. So don't get all flustered and give up in the middle. We win victory only as we dash across the finish line, the last border.

It is an effort worth making for everyone born as a human being. No

matter how much opposition and persecution there may be from behind, you should continue on your path. We have no latitude to concern ourselves with the opposition. The person who works hard to walk his destined path one step at a time will cross the final border. All of us must go this way. (24-77, 1969.6.29)

2.7.2. Modeling ourselves after God's external form, heart and divine character

We will all someday have to discard our physical bodies and move on to the spirit world. So we, as human beings born into this world, must be ready for death. Endure hardships to form your good self into your second self in the eternal world. Only when you receive good prenatal education while inside the mother's womb will you be born as a good and healthy baby. In the same way, your life on earth is similar to your life in the womb.

Therefore, grow by modeling yourselves after God's external form, His heart and divine character. As you grow, risk your lives in overcoming obstacles. (14-17, 1964.4.19)

2.7.3. Do not sin

We talk about the mind being straight. When we say an electrical pole is straight it means that it is standing upright. The same thing can be said when we say the mind is straight. That's why people walk upright; they must be vertical.

Make your mind completely vertical. Your body will form the horizontal line. There should be a centrifugal force and a centripetal force. The perpendicular force and the force of rotation must be balanced. Accordingly, you must find yourself.

When you say that you are yourself, God should agree with you and the True Parents should also agree. Then your relatives, your clan, and the nation must also agree that what you say is right. The one who is accused by them is the problem. In the future, the continents will be divided between frigid zones and temperate zones. A time will come when those who sin a lot will be sent to the North Pole, just as patients with contagious diseases are quarantined. (202-280, 1990.5.25)

2.7.4. Live and die for the world

I did not work hard for the sake of the Asian situation or the Korean people. Think about how to fulfill your responsibilities in the global field and be willing to die for this cause.

Thinking about all these things, you must live and die for the sake of the world, standing on the global level. Then, in what position should you die? Stand on the global level and die for it while embracing your loving spouse, family, tribe and race. The Unification Church has formed tribes and is now forming a race.

How will the founder of the Unification Church die when he dies? I will die for the sake of the world, while embrac-

ing its people and the Republic of Korea also. If the Korean people unite and die for the sake of the world, there will be a path for them to be able to live with the world. That is why I go forward seeking that path. (34-192, 1970.9.6)

2.7.5. Work hard

In what territory will you do your work? If you need money, make it. If you need people, work hard without eating and sleeping to raise them. Never ask anyone for help. Do not rely on the church headquarters for help; you should help them instead. Work more than three times harder than ordinary people.

That is why, if I were to live for 70 years, my life content would actually be equivalent to 210 years. Likewise, don't think of living for 100 years; instead, think of working three times harder than others. If you were to live that way for 70 years, it would be worth 210 years. Think this way: if you worked ten times harder, you would live 700 years; if you worked twenty times harder, you would live 1,400 years. You should work twenty-four hours a day throughout your entire life. Only when you live that way can you bear fruit and increase your ownership of love in the spirit world. Your fortune of love will grow. Your ownership will grow and your sphere of activities will expand. (102-38, 1978.11.19)

2.7.6. Work for the public good

What are the laws of heaven? They are to promote public righteousness.

Private matters belong to Satan, and public matters belong to God. Go the way of public righteousness. Even if everyone opposes you on this course, if you are not disturbed by the opposition but go the way of hardship with vitality, you will become a person of heaven who will welcome spring. (47-270, 1971.8.29)

If you see a greedy shopkeeper in a market, you will notice that the customers don't come to buy things from him. No one likes a greedy person. Everyone knows the method and secrets of managing one's life in terms of distinguishing between private and public matters. Therefore, if you are unable to go to heaven, you can't use the excuse that you didn't know how to manage your life. Why? You already know the distinction between public matters and private matters without being taught.

For example, let's say your mother distributes delicious rice cakes equally between you and your sister. You eat your share, but your sister keeps hers without eating it. Then you wake up at night and are about to secretly eat your sister's cake, that she had set her heart on. Before you can eat it, your conscience will cry out, "You scoundrel! You devil!" If you don't feel this in your conscience, you are not a human being. You should feel it. Why? Because your conscience pursues public matters. If you follow private desires you will perish.

Originally, for those who follow the laws of heaven, there is a mind that defends and protects them from destruction. What does it mean that it origi-

nally existed? Because God originally had such a mind, human beings came to have the same mind from the start. It is not a man-made law. Can you say to your conscience, "I do this because that's the way I am"? If you command your conscience, "Be like this because that's how I think," does it follow suit? We may not know where the conscience receives its orders from, but we know it is from somewhere other than ourselves. When we see how such feelings do in fact control us, we can understand that they do so over public and private matters. (31-241, 1970.6.4)

People today struggle internally and externally at the crossroads between good and evil, and public and private, in their daily lives. In many cases, they vacillate between the two and finally fall into a self-centered, private lifestyle. Yet those who do that will perish. Therefore, they must repent for their past self-centered, private lives, grit their teeth, and push themselves back into public life. People tend to waver between these two lifestyles. They are more inclined toward living privately, and end up distancing themselves from the public good. This has been your life of faith until today. Therefore, all those with a private lifestyle must repent. (31-242, 1970.6.4)

Do you wish to receive good fortune? Do you wish to live eternally? To do so, you must become public people. In educating your children, don't love them only as your own. Become parents who love their children as offerings for the

sake of the people of the world. When holding your babies to your breasts and nursing them, think of yourselves and your babies as representatives of the entire human race on earth. Nurse your babies with such a heart. Instead of caring only for your children and their appearance, cherish other people's children with a loving heart as if they were yours. Babies who are suckled by such mothers will certainly grow up to become great people. Such results may not surface right away, but after the first and second generations among your descendants there will be born great figures who can rule the world. This is the formula. (31-167, 1970.5.24)

Which of the two would you prefer to devote your entire lives to indemnifying: private matters or public matters? Both are devoted to some purpose. Those who stand up at the risk of their lives to devote their entire lives for the public good and public indemnity will become great people. A new history will be created by a group of people like this.

As we are facing that moment, how shall we spend the rest of our lives? This is the course of tribulation you must go from now. When you manage your life, the issue is whether you live individually or publicly. For whom do you eat, wear, buy and sell things in your daily life? Is it all for you or for God? The issue is whether yours is a private or public life. The question is also whether you have a private or a public mind in all these activities.

Pledge to go the public way. Any-

one charged with the mission to indemnify history must advance to the stage that everyone desires. Therefore, in the course of daily life, transcending private feelings and embodying public feelings is the important issue that all people of faith must concern themselves with.

What is sin? Sin arises from private standpoints. Ruin also comes about in the private sphere. Evil is the same. When private matters are pursued beyond a certain degree, they manifest evil. Private matters have certain limits; when exceeded, sin, evil and ruin result.

Then, where is the position that can be eternally good, eternally prosperous and eternally fortunate? Where is the position that can prevent sin, evil and ruin? It is the public position. Even when you eat, do so in a public position. When you work, manage from a public standpoint. When you speak, digest the situation with public words. In this way, live connecting all aspects of your lives with public matters. Such people cannot go to hell even if they try. (31-163, 1970.5.24)

2.7.7. Experience love

Do not just think of yourselves, saying, "I am the only one!" Are you only limited to your own selves? If all the elements from your mother and father and all elements supplied to you from the things of creation were removed from you, you would disappear. Then, what is the being called the self? It is a position that represents the mother and father. You live through your mother and father by going through the period

in the womb, inheriting their blood and flesh, and being provided for by them.

Thus, in our modern age, we use the terms Mother Earth and Mother Nature. This earth, this planet, is our mother who provides us with elements at different levels. How do we breathe when growing in our mother's womb? Through an umbilical cord. This is our hose linked to our mother's body.

However, we know that we are now connected to the second world, the world of air. As we emerge from life in the womb, we cause destruction. What are we connected to at the moment of our first cry? We come to be connected with the world of air where we breathe in air through the nostrils. Our nostrils are the absolute supply line. Can we live if our nostrils are blocked? If we can't breathe, we die. It is made with a dual structure.

When a baby comes out from the womb to connect to the world of air, the umbilical cord, the amniotic sac and the placenta that it depended on for its life in the womb are destroyed and die. What appears at that same moment of death? The baby comes out into the universe, to Mother Earth, and comes to live by the supply of elements through its mouth.

After coming out of the womb, what must our body do? While we are breathing through the umbilical cord in the womb, we are also preparing the nostrils as the airway. Then, when we emerge from the womb, we switch the use of the organ and begin to breathe. Likewise, what must we do in this world now? What we must do after our birth is

experience love, inhale the air of love from our mother and father, and undergo all processes by the supply of the air of love. Once we are born as a baby in a family, we go up and then come down along a sine curve. After we are born as a baby, we grow and age, and then we die and are dissolved. We are born as a baby and return to the stage of being a baby again.

What is going to happen when we die? We have to kick away the second womb and be connected to the third breathing organ of love. We kick away parental love and fraternal love and enter the world of love which is in total harmony with the Original Being of the great cosmos, God. The spirit world is filled with the air of love.

Therefore, we must prepare now in the earthly world a pipe-like device for breathing love. So we need to experience the spirit world. We can be immortal only when we become people who can feel spiritual love and then breathe the air of love.

When we kick away the womb of Mother Earth and come out, we breathe with the respiratory organs of love. We can gain eternal life only when we inherit the third love. Where do we go after being connected with love? We return to God. We return to the spirit world by being linked to the respiratory organ of love. Yet there remains the way to go to the Original Being, God. Since the seed was initiated by the Original Being, it must bear fruit and return to Him.

The course of life being a traveler's journey, what do we have to be equipped with here? We must go this path experi-

encing love. As the Fall meant that we couldn't receive parental love, we must form the vertical family centering on true parental love, true fraternal love, true conjugal love, and true filial love. We are also to create the horizontal environment by establishing many families in the north, south, east, and west.

These families should form true families that can link the vertical with the horizontal. When this is linked to the realm of the tribe, people, nation and world, this world bound by love is what we call the Kingdom of Heaven. (139-212, 1986.1.31)

2.8. What to leave behind before going to the spirit world

2.8.1. Leave a tomb of love behind

In general when human beings think about eternal life, they think of it not only in terms of decades or centuries, but in millennia, tens of millennia or eons. When people die, they are no different from animals. What use is it to leave anything behind? Nowadays, even atheists and agnostics say to themselves: "Ah, I have to make a name for myself." Yet, of what use is it to do that? Even if one became an American patriot and were honored with a monument, it would disappear when America perishes. What use is it to leave your name behind? Even if you did so, historically speaking, something that was considered good during a period of prosperity can later be viewed as bad during a period of decline. (103-15, 1979.1.28)

God's purpose is to have His posterity populate the earth. Therefore, when we go before God in the spirit world, having left behind children of the Living God on earth, we also come to stand in His position. That indeed, is the meaning of the scripture, "be fruitful and multiply and fill the earth." (146-223, 1986.3.11)

What will you do in your life? Leave a tomb of love behind. Let us leave a tomb of love behind! If you live inside a tomb of love, you will feel no bitter sorrow. You may get tired of living in a place like a tomb, but will feel no bitter sorrow if you live in love. If we leave a tomb of love behind in our lifetime, our life will be a success for eternity. If you live like that and die, God will bring His sons and daughters to welcome you in the spirit world. If there's no ring on your hand, God will put a diamond ring of the Kingdom of Heaven on your finger. If you're not well-dressed, God will dress you in the richest apparel fit for the royalty of the Kingdom of Heaven. (97-167, 1978.3.12)

2.8.2. Proprietary rights in the spirit world are determined through witnessing

Your proprietary rights in the spirit world will be determined by the number of citizens you have brought into the Kingdom of Heaven. They will be your assets, your eternal assets. Now the time has come to take stock of this. The time will come when millions of people will be witnessed to in a day. The Unification

Church has such tremendous potential. Look at the world: how many people are wandering about restlessly like raving lunatics, agonizing over whether to live or die, questioning life and committing suicide? (218-227, 1991.8.19)

The bigger your heart of love is when you enter the spirit world, the more people will line up to be with you. Such a person will be respected in the spirit world. If myriads of people were to flock around him, wishing that they could live with him, he would become exceedingly wealthy with extensive domains. What sort of person would be wealthy in the next world? The one who invests for the sake of love is a wealthy person.

Witnessing is the way to collect blessings of love. With love, we as owners recover the property of heaven stolen by thieves from the satanic world. We go to them with a heart of loving their mother and father more than they do, and bring in all the blessings related to love. Even if you are mistreated, you won't perish. Myriads of saints and all the things of creation will follow you and you will thereby become wealthy naturally. (205-347, 1990.10.2)

You enter the spirit world without money. Take care of Satan's children. Each of you is to look after more than 120 people. The Kingdom of Heaven lost all its citizens. By engrafting them, we establish a condition for them not to be lost.

In order to go through the twelve pearly gates in the spirit world, you must,

while on earth, recover the citizens of heaven from Satan. To do so, you must shed tears, sweat and blood. With the heart of true love for re-creation, invest your heart more than that of the fathers and mothers, husbands and wives, and sons and daughters of the satanic world, and bring about that transitional process by shedding your tears, sweat and blood. Without doing so, you cannot claim any heavenly citizens as your own. In proportion to this number, the conditions for your position of glory and your proximity to God in the other world will be established. (211-352, 1991.1.1)

What you take into the spirit world is neither money nor the name of the Unification Church. What should you do from now? It is a question of making as many sons and daughters as possible for God to love. People can procreate only a few babies; anyone can do that.

What must we undergo in the restoration process? By recovering from the satanic world many sons and daughters whom God can love, your meritorious deeds will be linked to your ancestors and serve to liberate them. This is the greatest gift you can obtain in the course of restoration.

Even if you served as a regional director, if you have no spiritual sons and daughters, you'll go to the spirit world with an empty can in your hand, because you won't have even one person attached to you.

Heaven is an infinite world requiring bridges linking up with the heart of love. Thus, the more the people you

witnessed to spread over the world, the more extensively you will be able to get around in the spirit world. Everyone will want to link up with you.

The relationships that you are able to resolve in heaven because of having resolved them on earth will create a vast base of activity when you go to the spirit world. It will all be yours. Thus, your sphere of activity can spread out to the entire spirit world based upon that standard. Without this base, you would be pushed into a corner and your activities restricted, so we have no spare time to be idle or rest.

Eating, living and raising children are no big deal for the spirit world. We must therefore recover heaven's citizens. They become your assets there.

We must quickly digest all of humanity and the world. If we do this, all the spirits in the next world will undergo the returning resurrection. If the birth-right now belonging to the satanic foundation reverts to God's foundation – into Adam's possession – the archangel will listen to Adam and follow him. By standing in the position of absolute obedience, the archangel enters the realm of Adam's love together with God's love, and thereby naturally enters heaven, following Adam. That is the principle.

People on earth did not fulfill this responsibility and caused a mess which they must clean up. We are to open the way for restoration through indemnity. Therefore, you must realize the tremendous value of witnessing. It is therefore a question of how many people you bring in for registration into the realm of eter-

nal life. Just posting up the Unification Church signboard is useless. We must bear fruit.

On his way to Jerusalem, Jesus went up to a fig tree to see if it had any fruit. When he found it to be without fruit, he cursed it, and it withered and died. That's exactly how it will be. What use is it to keep up appearances? Thus, the number of Blessed Families you create will become your harvest.

You need to bring 120 people, even hundreds. Without being able to do that, it does not make sense for you to love your own sons and daughters. From the viewpoint of the Principle, we need 120 people. The number 120 represents the nations of the world at the time of Jesus. The 430 families are equivalent to all the surnames in one nation. The 430 families represent 4,300 years of Korean history. Through them, I opened the gate for the citizens represented by these surnames to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Although I have opened it, it does not mean they have actually entered.

This is not empty talk; it is logical. Do not kill time. Only when you give birth to sons and daughters and raise them up during your younger years can you leave to your descendants a foundation to be proud of. Only when your children become great people can you stand proud before history. Without such actual results, you might be accepted at the family or village level, but not at the national level. For that, you need actual results that can be passed on as a tradition.

That is why everyone desires to leave

something behind for the nation, the world, and heaven and earth. The same principle applies to you. Have the clear concept that your lifelong purpose is to establish your domain of ownership. Therefore, you cannot think of giving up on the way of God's will, even if you do not like it.

Why would I take on that responsibility even if it means I have to go to prison and suffer there alone? To save people suffering in such circumstances. People in suffering circumstances will follow if it can benefit them. By following, they are harvested. When I go to the spirit world, because all I have done will be welcomed as something public, I will go to the highest position of the heavenly kingdom.

If citizens are well educated, the nation prospers. The same principle applies to you. It is a question of how much you can reason with people, straighten out their attitudes, and leave behind the achievement of your ideals centering on the realm of life of the heavenly kingdom. If this is done, the world will be restored quickly. That is why you have to devotedly raise them.

It is the same with me. When I give sermons, I speak for five or six hours at a time. I do not do that because I like to. The gist of a sermon is simple and does not even require a fifteen minute talk. I speak that long because I try to make it easy for different types of people, for those who have come to hear, to understand the gist by explaining to them using many examples, and to have them participate within that sphere. The

purpose is to sow as many seeds as possible in the spring season. If I sow many seeds, many plants will grow.

Where must you sow the seeds, then? It must be an unspoiled place. Where is that? Adolescents. Once you sow seeds in them, they will last a lifetime. They will not be uprooted.

When are people most sensitive? In elementary school. Peoples' senses dull as they advance through middle and high schools. Once they start going to university, it is like passing through a neighboring village, like an excursion activity. The most difficult time is during elementary school. Next is during middle and high school. As time goes by, their senses dull. We must sow the seeds of life accordingly.

If, while playing with children at Sunday school, you teach them children's songs, tell them stories and so on, such things will accumulate to become eternal assets for your future. Whenever you meet elderly people, testify to God's Word. Unification Church leaders are not doing these things well.

When on a bus, talk to ten people and ask them where they are going in order to get to know them. Arrange to see them again and when you do, introduce the Principle to them. You can witness to them as much as you like. There are enough materials. If you want to witness to people, it is better to ride on the bus or subway than to drive your own car. As you commute on the same route everyday, twelve months a year, you will get to know people by their faces. By greeting them, you are tapping into an interactive

network. Such paths are cleared, so why are you just wasting time?

More important than eating is harvesting the citizens of heaven, but you are not doing that well. It is our main occupation. It is our principal activity while we live on earth. Among the works you should do in your lifetime, there is nothing more important than that. Landing a job, getting promoted and making money will all be water under a bridge. Money will be useless in the other world; materials and knowledge are unnecessary there. Even if you are not taught, your mind knows ahead of time; you will know everything within a week.

Power is unnecessary in the other world. What is needed there is love-centered harmonizing power, love-centered influential power. Therefore, people lacking that love-centered influential power are intrinsically unable to harmonize with the original world which moves by the influence of love. If they should arrive there, they are repelled and end up in hell.

You say you have lived and worked for the Unification Church ever since you joined it, but you should consider in what position you have worked. Always ask yourselves in which direction you are headed and in which position you are located. If you do that prayerfully, God will be with you. You will know it the moment you close your eyes – even without praying. As you go somewhere to give a talk, the right words just flow out of your mouth. If you come across conscientious people, you are drawn to

enter their houses.

Everything seeks relationship. Even flowers have the power of attraction to create relationships, whether as a subject or object partner. Even if you see someone for the first time, it does not mean that you cannot relate to that person. That is how a magnet is – its essence is eternally unchanging. By the same token, if you go to such a place, you feel joyful and are inspired to speak. Once you enter that state, your mouth opens even if you were not intending to speak.

When you go to that other world someday, what will you say to God who has been guiding the work of redemption and who took great pains to this day to find one Adam? From the Genesis up to the present day, God has been seeking His perfect son Adam. You all know the Principle. This is the weapon that can save countless people. Until now, God could not teach humankind and consequently had to guide the work of redemption amid ignorance. On earth, we work on God's behalf and are doing greater things than He. The Principle provides us with a path to enlighten and assemble a following of hundreds and thousands of Adams.

That is why we have to connect them to eternal life. The question of eternal life is a serious matter. When spring comes the young women go and look for herbs to pick. Likewise, just as you would go and seek out what you desire, you have to live your whole life in such a way. When your contacts show up while you are doing that, have the heart of wanting to convey the Principle to them all

night. Go all out to inspire them at your first meeting.

You should not be doing anything other than finding sons and daughters whom you can take with you to heaven. Even if you had hundreds of millions of dollars and lived richly, all that would pass away. Do it even to the point of investing all your materials, knowledge, and your very lives. Invest them all at one time, not separately, to create heavenly citizens. The value of your investment will be proportional to the amount of your input your input.

You so-called Unification Church leaders here: you may stiffen your shoulders proudly and fancy yourselves, but that is shameful. The question is how many lives you have saved through your own efforts.

The degree to which you will be praised eternally before heaven for your achievements depends on how many heavenly citizens you harvested. People have not had a spade to harvest them until now. They could not do it because they did not know, but you have an A-frame carrier on your back. You can bring in an explosive harvest once you start spreading God's words passionately. However, because you are wasting time even with that kind of real internal power, God wants to strike you with a thunderbolt.

It matters not whether it is midnight or dawn, whether night or day. When Heaven is ready to receive you, you cannot say to Him, "Oh, I just want to sleep!" In that position, you just run straight through.

We must provide education concerning the issue of eternal life. From now on, assume that responsibility. I cannot curse those who oppose the Unification Church. God wants them to connect with me and commit themselves, but if they drop out that is our church's responsibility and I must assume responsibility for that. This world came to oppose us because of Satan, but it is our responsibility to overcome those adverse circumstances quickly. If we do not, our situation will be all the more miserable from the resultant damage it will sustain.

It is the same as nursing a baby. If you give birth to a baby, you have to nurse it. That is why people come looking for you. When they do, never treat them coldly. I have also lived that way all my life. If people visit me even at midnight, unless they decide to leave, I will stay seated with them and never ask them to leave. They will not want to leave because they are looking for something. Then, I must share God's words with them. I will live my whole life that way. I will never be businesslike. The spirit world is always awake.

If you Unification Church members fight among yourselves and cause even one person to fall away, the damage would be great. That person could come to understand God's will and fulfill his responsibility before heaven; he could then go on to save thousands and myriads of people, and surprise you by surpassing you. So if you mismanage your people, everything will go wrong. If you constantly lower yourselves and strive to elevate everyone else, you will have no

problems. That is what humility means.

But if you err, you will go down. When entering the room where your wife and children are at night, be a responsible father and husband. If the husband does well, his wife will follow him to the other world. Of course, there is a process of training in order to enter the Father's house. It is fastest if they can go directly. The other side is an unforgiving world. We are now preparing to be in step with it.

Do this work even if you have to skip a meal. Do not say you will do it after you eat. If a charge of dynamite was about to explode, you would not be eating. It is a serious question of getting people to connect with the issue of eternal life. A light can burn only when an electrical current generated at a power plant is transmitted through various terminals and electrical circuit devices. Only with a connection will it stay on.

Therefore, love your spiritual sons and daughters more than your own children, and do more for your spiritual parents than for your natural parents. The parents who gave birth to you are parents from the satanic world, but your spiritual parents are parents from the heavenly world. Therefore, serve them more than you would your own mother. Furthermore, spiritual sons and daughters have the responsibility to nurture the children of the people who saved them and to help them get married. Such is God's will. They are to raise all those children.

Thus, unless people become linked to eternal life, everything is in vain. It

is not over after they have heard God's Word. Keep encouraging them in order to bring them to the Blessing. They must receive it. If they do and start witnessing, a connection will be made naturally. If they can overcome persecution in the difficult circumstances of the satanic world, they are already on the path of life. When they receive the Blessing, your job is done.

Do not give egotistical sermons. Speak while shedding blood and sweat. Go through the pain of giving birth. Do that while shedding tears. If your eyes are not wet with tears, your sermon is contrived. (230-25, 1992.4.15)

2.8.3. Why we should have lots of children

There is not even one Unification Church member who does not know God. We believe in the spirit world. We began from love, separated from God, and will finally return to Him.

If a couple is truly one in heart, when they go to the spirit world, they can interchange positions anytime. We say love is one. If you look into a woman, there is a man inside. It is exactly the same with God's dual characteristics. Since internal character and external form arose as separate entities from God, in order to return to the Original Being, they must ascend the ladder of love. As the standard of creation originated from love, one must ascend this ladder to return. After all, our final destination is to be with God.

People do not give birth to babies in

the spirit world. It is a vertical, circular God-centered world not requiring the birth of babies. As he needed a horizontal base, God created human beings as His embodiment. It is an earthly field of reproduction from which all the citizens of the spirit world originate. From this providential perspective, we can understand why people engage in birth control. The evil lineage is not to be propagated anymore.

The heavenly citizens that Unification Church Blessed Families reproduce are their assets. Your own children are more valuable than spiritual children, who do not have a direct relationship to the Blessing. Your position in heaven will be determined by the number of children you leave behind. (205-97, 1990.7.7)

Perfection must be achieved on earth, not in the spirit world. It can be done based on true love on earth, not in the spirit world. This is why you need to have children. They become heavenly citizens, ideal citizens of the heavenly kingdom. So give birth to many sons and daughters. Originally, there were to be more than twelve directions, and that is why I desire more than twelve directions. (217-130, 1991.5.12)

Without sons and daughters, the Kingdom of Heaven would not flourish. For this reason Blessed Families should not practice birth control. People who starve to death still end up in the spirit world; if they die in the midst of love, they end up in heaven.

So, the satanic world is now promot-

ing birth control, but it should not be practiced in the Unification Church. I underwent hardships for God's will, but did not die of starvation. Even if I went into a famine-stricken area, I could survive because I am trained to survive. When we sacrifice everything for the sake of absolute love, we can control God, the satanic world, and heavenly fortune. What do I mean by control? It means that God will follow us. God, this world, and heavenly fortune will follow us. (201-133, 1990.3.27)

Raise your children to become great people whom you can bequeath to posterity on earth. In the future, they will all go to the spirit world and become citizens of heaven. How many people will you offer as citizens of heaven? It was a hardship on earth but becomes a noble, glorious way in the world of eternity.

You go to great lengths to educate and feed your children on earth, but in the spirit world, food, clothing and living are no problem. You will wish you had as many children as possible. (218-319, 1991.8.22)

You will not be procreating in the spirit world. As God stands in the position of the vertical Parent, there is but one point. (221-204, 1991.10.24)

What is God doing? He is saving the world. The works that allowed people to enter a higher dimension in spirit world were performed on earth. What kind of place is the earth? It is the manufacturing plant for producing the citizens of

heaven – the vast unchanging Kingdom of Heaven.

Even if each of you had a hundred children, heaven is so vast that you could never overproduce. That world can accommodate any number of people. Do not practice birth control. Once you go to the spirit world, the question will be how many citizens of heaven you created and led there. Understand that leading many true sons and daughters to the Kingdom of Heaven establishes your rights and interests, as well as the level at which you will be honored in the heavenly world. (202-38, 1990.5.1)

2.9. Our attitude in the face of death

Jesus taught everything: “Whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for me will find it.” Where will you find such apparently groundless remarks in this world? Nowhere. Yet they are true.

Then, why do we die? To what end? To live. There is some purpose to live for. People live for different purposes. For what are you asked to “love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind”? To become God’s son. It means to offer your head to love God – you have but one – but you must offer it to Him.

Where are we to go and die? In the highest position rather than the lowest. Thus, we should die for the Kingdom of Heaven. It is greater than any nation in this world. We must die in God’s Kingdom, the only one in heaven and on earth. Where shall we die? That is the

question. Even in dying, there is a way.

There is a proper position in which to die. Don’t die in the ordinary Korean way. If you do, however many times you die, it won’t count. Die in the highest position for the nation of God’s heart, at the heart of the heavenly kingdom – the best place to die. Your death should inspire everyone in the universe to raise a flag and welcome you. (34-184, 1970.9.6)

Today, we are yearning for the day of the last resurrection, the day of hope. That time of hope which everyone is yearning for is one that all humankind can delight in, yet it does not come easily. That hope can only be owned by those who conquer death. Only those who fought for God against Satan will take possession of it. Only those who suffered persecution together with God for the sake of heaven will take possession of that hope.

As we contemplate such a time approaching us, we must have ardent hearts to overcome our living circumstances and even the fear of death. If such ardor does not emanate from within you, you cannot draw that one day of hope into the realm of your daily life and go on living.

Therefore, those who are said to be living a true lifestyle will ask themselves, what will be the scenario of my death? Do not wait until you are eighty and about to die to ask yourselves the question, “In what fashion am I going to celebrate my last day?” When reaching the place of death, Jesus said, “It is finished,” and “Father, into your hands I commend

my spirit.” Indeed, he is the only one who has been victorious throughout all the stages of his life.

You will meet with death one day. While looking back on your past at that moment, think about what kind of words you would wish to leave behind.

This path is one without even friends. It is the path without even beloved parents, siblings, a beloved spouse, or children. It is the path only you must go alone. It is the path you cannot revisit or return to; it is the path, once trodden, that you can never return to in all of eternity. With what kind of heart do you walk this path? At the moment you face death, if you should lack the hope with which you can overcome it, your end will come right then and there.

The many people who have upheld and established God’s will were not the type to retreat before the path of death, but rather laughed scornfully at death, overcoming it valiantly. Such people have appeared and established the heavenly way.

All of you must embrace the hope with which you can overcome death when you are confronted by it. After you have traversed that path, you must be able to race joyfully to that original homeland for which you have longed with the hopeful thought of standing tall in front of Heaven. Only those who fervently desire God’s ideal world can overcome death.

All the things of this world will pass away. Your beloved parents, spouses and everything that you love will all pass away, and you will eventually face death.

Even so, only those possessed of the victorious hope that lets even death go past can stand before Heaven.

People living on earth today do not desire the path of suffering and sorrow. The passing of joyous occasions evokes nostalgia in them. Such is human nature.

This world we live in is mixed with sadness and joy. All the happiness we are experiencing will disappear with death and cannot remain beyond it.

Our heart seeks happiness, longs for better things, and yearns for the eternal world. If sorrow and joy disappear with death, then does our heart also finish with death? No. The fact that our hearts and minds move in that direction is proof that such a world actually exists.

People are spiritual beings and their lives are eternal. People who have loyally walked the way of death for heaven, embracing hope as they followed a path repulsive to many people, have done so because they felt something ordinary people could not feel and appreciated something ordinary people could not appreciate. It was for that reason that they could tread even the path of death.

Unless your longing becomes stronger than any adversity, hardship, sadness, or death that you may encounter in your actual life, you will become people who feel regretful before death and draw back from pain and sorrow. As Jesus surmounted the summit of death, entered the eternal world, and built the sphere of resurrection, we today are also destined to surmount the summit of death.

Then what type of people live with

heavenly hope? They are those who can joyfully surmount the summit of death that grieves humanity. Such people are the ones who cherish Heaven's hopes. So, do not become people who covet and grieve after all the things of this world before death. Become those who can stand before heaven and be proud of the value of their death. God seeks such sons and daughters of hope.

If there were people who felt Heaven's joy in such a position, God could not but love them. If there were a throng of people that cried out to Heaven from such a position, Heaven could not but answer that cry. (6-52, 1959.3.22)

"For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for me and for the gospel will save it." What do those words mean? Those placed in the position to die for God's will must die.

Then what happens when we die? Before we die, we belong to ourselves, but after we die, we belong to God. That is because we inherited the fallen lineage. Thus, our lives cannot be freed from satanic bondage before we die, but we bond together with God after death.

Which is stronger: life or death? Is life stronger than death or is death stronger than life? Death is stronger than life in the satanic world. Therefore, after coming to know God's will, do not hate death when you are in the position of having to die. You have to die anyway in the satanic world. Unless you die, you cannot resurrect. Unless we pass through one age, we cannot welcome another.

What kind of death is the Bible referring to? It does not end the life that God has eternally, but that life which inherited the fallen lineage of the satanic world. Thus, those who seek to die for the Will shall live. These words sound paradoxical, but from what we understand about the Fall and restoration, restoration cannot be achieved unless that is done. This is the normal logic of restoration.

The biggest question then is whether we can offer our lives. When I started out on this path, I asked myself if I was resolved to lay down my life.

I was resolved to die. I also thought about how I would die as well as the last words I would utter. I did not think about how I could live.

Since God's providence revolved around Korea, I sought the position of death. Where was that? It was the place to confront the enemy, that is to say, the place where the enemy was to be found. I went out in search of the enemy headquarters. Because the foundation of the Will based upon Korean Christianity fell into satanic hands, I went to North Korea, which was Satan's den, to recover it.

Because I had to fight the worldwide Communist Party from that time on, I went to North Korea. I entered the nation of the implacable foe, fully prepared to be chained in irons and imprisoned. Despite the atrocious ordeals that were imposed upon me, I never surrendered. I never lost God's dignity even at the point of extreme starvation. No matter how constricted my living conditions were, I never violated heavenly law.

In spite of my confinement, I was able to restore everything within those limited circumstances, and sought after the motivation for a new start and a new meaning of life before God. I started out doing that. Even though I was made to perform all manner of heavy labor, I maintained the conviction that I would never break, and that I would never die even if all others did.

The Unification Church did not start from the place of seeking life but that of seeking death. Yet were you resolved to die after you came to know the purpose of the Unification Church? When Colonel Heo, the head of special operations under the Freedom Party, and the government's chief suspect in the murder of Kim Chang-ryong, was executed, he was asked if he felt any remorse for having planned and ordered the murder. He said he felt no remorse and died like a man. When such assassinations or shootings occur, you should compare those executed with yourselves, and ask yourselves how you would die in comparison.

You might be driven by the conspiracies of your enemies to die as a great traitor, or you might die as a result of your comrades, friends, or loved ones, or others, plotting to harm you, but when you die, do so with the heart of benefiting the world. Die without enemies. If you are to die anyway, die after planting something, and without making any enemies. Be resolved to die while loving the enemy as a friend rather than otherwise. Jesus' prayer on the cross for his enemies was great in this way. (34-45, 1970.8.29)

2.10. When entering the spirit world

2.10.1. At the time of impending death

Success or failure in life is not decided over decades, but in a moment. Compared to a human lifespan, birth occurs in but a brief moment. Of course, we spent ten months in our mother's womb leading up to our birth, but that was a period of preparing for that one moment of birth. Ultimately, no matter how good the preparations may have been during those ten months, if the baby does not pass through the decisive moment successfully, it meets a tragic fate.

Those ten months of constant nurturing and safeguarding are designed for celebrating the moment of birth. In other words, that period serves the purpose of bringing about that moment of birth. Notwithstanding the greatness of the gestation period, an error at the moment of delivery can cause tragic consequences. (31-184, 1970.5.31)

A person who regrets his past at the point of facing that final, fateful moment on earth will see all the details of his life flash across his mind as images. No one needs to explain to him what kind of person he is, he will know by himself. The circumstances he has been associated with through the life he inherited from his ancestors, the situation he leaves behind, and everything from his past will appear as images in his mind at the last moment of his life.

A person who can say, "It was true.

I have left behind something more precious than my life,” would have lived a valuable life, no matter how brief. Yet there are people who say to themselves, “My whole life course from birth to death was merely a period I spent as a passer-by.” If such people reflect on all their past situations, they will shake their heads, feeling that they do not want to remember the past, and they will die miserable people. Opposite them, are those people whose faces fill with more and more joy as they more and more reflect on their past; their problems are absorbed into the ideal and even the fear of death will be celebrated as a moment of comfort.

Viewing life in this way, we can see that if one had left something behind and if the moment for that person to reflect on their past is not a moment of fear, then that person’s past and reality will manifest as things not dead. A person with such a past is surely destined to be someone that all the people of the nation can follow, one who bequeaths a legacy that all humanity is destined to inherit.

What kind of situation creates that opportunity? When a nation is faced with intractable problems at a time of misery and cruelty, and a person takes responsibility for solving those problems at the risk of his or her life, that moment becomes the unforgettable moment in a life story.

The experience of saving your brother, relatives, or other people at the risk of your life, rather than the experience of risking your life for your own sake during your life course, and the occasion of

having faced a moment in which you had to save them, can appear as an image in your mind at the last fateful moment. The times of happiness centered on you and a blessed time of being welcomed and glorified by many people, will have an effect on that moment.

With regard to the question of whether we were good, became true, and could stand alone before God, truth and goodness do not begin from ourselves or end in ourselves. Only when they begin in us and bring results in others, or they begin in others and bring results in us, can goodness come about. According to the Principle, all beings in the universe are to enter into reciprocal relationships.

If your life up to now has been a life of giving, there should be no fear on the path of death. If you give everything for others, sacrifice for others, shed tears for others while leading a life close to the truth, invest your life for others, find your desires in others, and concentrate all the life force flowing from your pulse and invest it for others, your past will become a shining past.

When you long for such a past and think about the nation, you will come to the conclusion that the nation of hope must also be such a nation. When you come to yearn for such a past, you will sacrifice for others and you will be able to decide how the original goodness you hope for should be like. If you go before God saying “Since I have fought for goodness in the past, then naturally this will bear fruit in the future.” This content becomes the foundation for your eternal life.

The path of saints and sages and the path of ordinary people are different. The saints and the sages are those who sought to live for history, the world, and the future. Ordinary people, however, are those who sought to live for themselves and to make the world serve them.

(31-308, 1970.6.7)

2.10.2. When entering the spirit world

We all live in a similar way after we are born. As life progresses do we gradually become weaker or stronger?

Even if you came to know who you are and made a resolution, that resolve gradually weakens after ten, twenty, and thirty years. As you age through your fifties and sixties and into your seventies and eighties it becomes a problem. Phenomena in the world of dynamics demonstrate the principle that all motion tends to gradually diminish; any action caused by a force subsequently decays.

Using electricity as an example, the potential energy of any power source diminishes as it powers a motor or produces work. Exhaustion inevitably occurs. Looking at it this way, we cannot stand still all our lives. We must continue moving throughout our life – whether we like it or not. Even when we move, is it in the right or wrong way? There are many ways to move.

Then, in which direction should people go or roll? We roll without even realizing it. If we live like a rolling stone that might smash into a rock or go down the drain, how dangerous that is! How

unfortunate! How insecure! It is a problem. Once you enter the spirit world, you can no longer relate to all the things we now measure within the confines of space and time. That world transcends time and space. (141-269, 1986.3.2)

What happens when we enter the spirit world? You have your own spiritual level. Everyone has a certain spiritual level, within certain limits such as one degree. Since that is the case, even those who were blessed separate when they first enter the other world. Why? Because each person's spiritual level is different. (194-61, 1989.10.15)

What will you become in the heavenly kingdom? An ambassador or a servant to run errands at the embassy? Be an ambassador. That is not easy. In a life-threatening situation, the ambassador is the first to die.

We know of the existence of the spirit world. It is more certain than this world. What kind of a world is it? It is one in which everything is possible as long as it is acceptable in God's plan. (107-55, 1980.1.20)

Do you have a gift to bring along when you go to heaven? When you go to the spirit world, religious martyrs will line up in front of you. Can you unwrap the bundle you brought with you in front of them? What suffering have you and the Unification Church undergone? How can you say you live for the nation and the world without having withstood such hardships? I have suffered, but I do

not think of it as suffering. Naturally, we still have a long way to go.

Upon your arrival in the spirit world, you have to be able to unwrap your bundle and say, “Here is the gift I prepared all my life; please receive it.” If women must bring a dowry when moving in with their in-laws, how can you go to heaven empty-handed? (32-71, 1970.6.21)

If you are not independent, you cannot enter the spirit world. It has its own world, nations, tribes, families, and individuals. Unless you have the independence that enables you to say that you are an absolutely necessary individual there, you cannot enter heaven. Be so independent that you can say you are absolutely necessary to your family and tribe. Only when you have such independence there can you enter heaven. (19-43, 1967.12.24)

In the spirit world, the earth seems like a speck of dust. You would not know how immense the spirit world is. It is an infinite world that transcends time and space. You will only have to call out, “Whoever lived on earth with such and such a heart at such and such a time show yourself!” and that person will appear in the twinkling of an eye. It is a world where intuitive sensations become real.

It will not be a problem to host a banquet for a million people at once. You would just have to say, “I want to share with everyone this joy of ideal love by having a banquet in which the women will be dressed in such and such a way

and the men will wear such and such clothes and I’d like it to happen now!” No sooner said than done, meals and fruit will appear instantaneously according to your wishes. If everyone has eaten their fill, what will you do with the leftovers?

There are no kitchens there. You don’t need to worry about anything. There are no food-processing plants or auto-manufacturing plants or anything like that. There are all kinds of flowers. You can create as many houses as you want corresponding to the level of your heart of love. (224-105, 1991.11.23)

When ordinary people think about their past, the memories are dark, but when saints think about their past, they are bright. What is that brightness? It is not for them but something that can draw out the nation of hope. For that reason, if there is the heavenly kingdom of hope, that kingdom has to be started by them. That is heaven.

As you chart your path through the realm of the Fall with its grim surroundings, you will be anticipating ups and downs, plotting your life course according to your wishes, saying to yourself that you will go this way one year and that way next year, or this way for ten years and that way for the next ten years. If you experience ups and downs centered on yourselves, when you come to meet your final destiny, all your records of sacrificing others for yourselves will tie you down. (31-308, 1970.6.7)

Have you ever once thought you’ll

keep going this way even when you're seventy or eighty or even in your dying moments? Even on your deathbed, you must be able to present proof, saying, "I have illumined the past in this way and done these things in the present. I would do those things in the future, but I am dying. So, please take care of them on my behalf." It must not be just lip service. It should be the case that the people around your death bed cling to you, crying out, "Don't go! Don't go!" (73-114, 1974.8.16)

2.10.3. Documents required for entry procedures into the spirit world

Where do you first get a certificate that enables you to say, "I have become like this. I have done these things. Here is my certificate of victory"? You cannot issue such a certificate yourself. Then who issues it? Satan first. God cannot. You have to obtain the certificate of victory from Satan.

Jesus knew that very well, and that is why, when he started his three-year public ministry, he summoned Satan and fought him for forty days to have him issue the certificate. There were the three temptations. After Jesus gained victory over them, Satan declared: "You are victorious on the national level, so I have no choice but to issue the certificate; otherwise, I would have to give up all my territory to heaven's side immediately."

Thus, you must first obtain a certificate from Satan; then receive another one from Jesus. Finally, you have to

receive one more from God. You need these three certificates. (15-121, 1965.10.3)

2.11. Things you will know clearly only after you die

If you get connected with the spirit world through prayer, you will come to know that in the spirit world, the spirits are working very hard to bring their descendants closer to heaven. Yet here, people speak ill of their ancestors and just want to live selfishly.

That is something you will know only after you die. If you wonder whether my words are true, die and find out. If you could die and come back to life, that would be good, but once you die, that is the end. So it is said that when Rev. Moon of the Unification Church intimidates people, he is doing such a fine job of intimidating people; no one can do it the way he can. Yet watch what happens after you die. I am not saying all this because I have nothing else to talk about. (22-337, 1969.5.11)

Where do you discover God's supreme love? Not in a palace. The way to occupy the highest love of God is found at the bottom of hell where you are bleeding close to the point of collapse and about to die. When I was in prison under the communists, the spirit world testified to me without my saying even one word. That is why I had disciples who were resolved to do anything for me at the risk of their lives. Given that kind of support, had I been a villain, I would have had many ways to escape from prison. God

works with us in such situations. (91-175, 1977.2.6)

2.12. Altruism gets you closer to God

The spirit world consists of three stages. Those who lived more for others will go to a higher level in the spirit world. For those who lived for themselves, the opposite world will unfold. There are also three stages there. Those already there will object, saying: “Huh! We don’t want people like you!” Everyone rejects egoists and welcomes altruists.

Among those who go to the spirit world after living on earth, the altruists take the top places. This is especially so for those who apply themselves in, say, forty countries and live for others with the heart that they would have toward their mother and family, and with the heart of a saint to save the people of the world from evil.

That is why I think this way: “As a man, I am the commander-in-chief of the filial sons, patriots and saints of the historical eras. Although everyone else who had the name of God’s son failed, I was born as a victorious son.” Only one thing will enable you to say that. What is it? It is simple: absolute altruism. Only those who give and forget, who do things for others and forget, can digest that world.

Know clearly whether you belong to the group that will go to heaven or the one that will go to hell. These words are not ones I have just thought up. They come from someone who knows the

spirit world well.

No one can avoid death. You cannot avoid death. Egoists go to hell, and altruists go to heaven. These two worlds become separated at death. (203-99, 1990.6.17)

What will happen from now on? People will offer their properties to heaven. Live for others – for the higher cause and for the greater good. Live for the world and for God, and to liberate humankind. Make people change to the new lineage. Because the lineage got entangled, God has been powerless until now. As we have now entered the era of conversion, you need to know that the free heaven and earth are approaching and therefore sow seeds of goodness. Know clearly how you should act. From now on, be a throng possessing eternal life that can be linked to the clan of the Messiah, the citizens of heaven and the eternal Kingdom of Heaven. (203-185, 1990.6.24)

What will be the basis of competition in the future? Living for the sake of others. Why? Those who live for others go to a higher position in heaven. By serving such people and riding on their coattails one can make great leaps forward. You can be launched from there, just like the satellites that are launched from Cape Kennedy. This is because living for the sake of an individual is comparable to when God created His object partners; you, too, will stand as the object of that individual. For that purpose, we follow someone and live for others.

You serve me to make use of me.

Earning my love is your launching pad toward occupying God. Satellites symbolize how today's believers can take off and cross infinite distances to get to heaven.

Eventually, human beings are destined to go to the original homeland. They may have their hometown in this world, but when they return to the original homeland – the eternal homeland – those who have nothing to show for their efforts will be miserable. You know how devastating not being able to join a group can be. (213-193, 1991.1.20)

Until now, there was no family, but from now on, the organization of families will begin. Everyone was separated until now. Why? Everyone was separated because their cultural and emotional backgrounds and customs were all different, so a family is the place where we create new customs and a new culture and cast them as habits. Without the family, the society could not exist. A national society could not exist and thus neither the nation nor the world could exist.

For this reason religions now constitute the mainstream. People may reside in the Buddhist realm or Christian realm. Where people from different countries cannot peacefully co-exist, people of the same religious realm can. Religious realms all desire one world and believe in one God. Thus, they can stay together. All religions belong to God's realm. Nations do not.

From the Unification Church, individuals, families, tribal messiahs,

national messiahs and world messiahs will come forth. The path the individual takes leads to the path the family takes, and the path the family takes leads to the path the tribe takes. Then what kind of world is the spirit world? It is a place where people live altruistically based on true love – not selfishly, but for the greater good. Even on earth, those who live 100 percent for others say, “Step on me and go on!” However big America may be, if there is someone who lives for the people more than the president, everyone will welcome him even if he steps on the president and goes on. But if someone lives only for his own benefit, everyone becomes an enemy.

It is the same as in the spirit world. If someone lives for a greater cause, he can pass naturally. If something serves a greater cause, it can pass naturally. So, if someone lives for the world, he does not have to live for America alone. America is included in the world. It is the same for Korea. All nations are included.

Then, what would underlie the direction that families would take naturally, that everyone can welcome, in going their way? It can only be the way of love to live for others.

These two things cannot be blocked even in the satanic world on earth. Even the satanic world has to absolutely accommodate them. Even the most wicked parents and evil people welcome someone who tries to give them something with true love. (215-174, 1991.2.17)

2.13. Judgment

Have you ever thought that an order to appear before the court of judgment in the spirit world would come to you? Someday, that order will be given.

To administer and manage that court, there must be a judge, a prosecutor, and a defense attorney. Then who will they be? The judge is God, the prosecutor is Satan, and the defense attorney is Jesus. (17-176, 1966.12.18)

Section 3. To go to a Higher Realm in the Spirit World

3.1. The standard for religious people is the spirit world

What is the difference between those who are religious and those who are not? Those who are religious believe in setting the standards of the spirit world throughout their entire lives. Religion starts from the determination to meet and then live with God.

The contents of the scriptures the founders of all religions left behind did not dwell in the details of human life. They taught about things with which we can relate to the contents of the eternal, transcendent world based on the realm of God's existence. (187-286, 1989.2.12)

3.2. The determination of proprietary rights in the spirit world

Long ago, we experienced many days when we survived trembling in a cold

room without even a meal of barley. We were actually closer to God in those days and we worried about the nation and the world. As the foundation expanded and became larger, we started to care more about how others would like us.

No matter how much knowledge, power or money one might have, these things will all be washed away. When people die, they leave everything behind. What you should carry with you is your efforts to expand God's love to the world. The record of loving humankind and God remains to the end and becomes the standard to decide proprietary rights in the other world. (127-38, 1983.5.1)

In the path of restoration, there is no discount. When we came to this world, each of us came alone, but we cannot go alone. We have to take many people with us. (14-105, 1964.6.20)

You should know that the number of people you witnessed to will decide your proprietary rights in the spirit world when you arrive there. You do not go there wearing a sign indicating you were a leader. (125-16, 1983.3.1)

3.3. Love people

In the spirit world, if you do not have God's love you cannot eat – you are not qualified to eat. Hell is the place where people can only look at the food but cannot eat it, and where they have knowledge but cannot act upon it. Those who established the central value that can unite the spiritual and physical worlds centering

on God's love, and who experienced the life of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth with mind and body united centering on God's love, can own the eternal, ideal world and the heavenly kingdom. Others will be excluded. (91-173, 1977.2.6)

What can we be proud of when we go to the spirit world? When I go to the spirit world and if God asks me, "What did you do on the earth?" I would not boast with the reply, "I spent much money." My pride would be based on how much I lived longing for and loving people. (187-310, 1989.2.12)

3.4. Love God even more

Nothing else is necessary in the other world: love God more than you love the world, your nation, your spouse and your children. That is the Principle.

When you go to the spirit world, do you earn money? Do you sleep for hundreds of millions of years? Neither of these. You can eat food anytime according to your standard. (126-142, 1983.4.12)

3.5. Establish the family foundation

Why must you have sons and daughters? There surely has to be love. God has to exist, man and woman have to exist, and husband and wife have to exist. Next, the blood has to be mixed. The descendants are born with God's blood and love blood, vertical blood and horizontal blood, mixed together. Therefore, unless you have descendants, you cannot have a place to play and rest in the

other world.

If husband and wife – just the two of them – live face to face till they turn eighty or ninety, will they be happy? They cannot live an interesting life. There has to be a daughter-in-law and grandchildren. For grandfathers and grandmothers, there is no greater happiness than holding their grandchildren.

Those who could not have grandchildren cannot achieve harmony with heaven and earth and keep in step with north, south, east and west in the spirit world. (197-32, 1990.1.7)

Therefore, you have no latitude to think, "Oh, It is tough!" after work, or "Oh, It is tough! I couldn't sleep and I'm tired." Then the spirit world will open up. You will see it. If you open your eyes and see it and eat meals spiritually, you will not get hungry even if you do not eat all day. That kind of thing will happen. Your body will feel light, and you will not get tired even if you run around all day. After experiencing these things, this world becomes dull. This world is necessary to give birth to children horizontally, but actually you do not need to be in it. Since you have to bring your family to the other world, you have no choice but to stay this way. (91-175, 1977.2.6)

3.6. Live centered on the tradition of the realm of the heart

Is religion necessary in the spirit world? It is not. In the spirit world, Presbyterianism and Roman Catholicism are unnecessary. You go into the realm

of living with God, so religion is unnecessary.

Then, what is necessary? Something precious is needed but what is it? The most precious thing is to be able to receive God's love.

Today, we talk about the realm of heart in the Unification Church. Where is the base of the realm of heart? The world of heart is where true parental love, true conjugal love and true fraternal love centered on God's love can be universally expanded.

Husband and wife living for the sake of one another is not primary in the original world. It is the conjugal love centered on heaven and earth and the cosmos that is primary. Therefore, we value the cosmos more. You may carry on conjugal love, but you must practice conjugal love centered on the world.

Therefore, the most important question relates to where we build and find the foundation of love that meets the standard in that world. For that reason, the Unification Church is working to build that foundation in this world.

Different from numerous religions and numerous things that are said to be precious in this world, the Unification Church is the only place which has started to build this foundation. What do we teach? We teach people how to become successful candidates in the world of heart.

When you go to the other world, you will meet many people there who loved their race, many couples, patriots, loyal subjects, virtuous women and saints. But there is no one there who lived cen-

tered on the tradition of God's original realm of heart. (126-139, 1983.4.12)

3.7. The pass with which to enter the spirit world

From now on, when you start something, do so centering on God. This is a fundamental principle.

When you go to the spirit world, depending on how much you are in accord with or have assimilated that principle, you will be connected with all the realms, from hell through the middle realm and paradise to heaven.

Just because someone is a world-famous scholar, can he go to heaven when he enters the spirit world? No, he cannot. That is why the religious world teaches people to deny everything and go. You have to give up everything and go. That is established logic. Then what is the most precious thing? What matters is how much you suffer for heaven and how many tears you shed for the world. That is the ticket for passing through to the other world.

If you look at this from God's position, is He a God of joy? Religious people who think that God is joyful have neither brains nor common sense. The one who is the most sorrowful is God. The tears God has shed and the suffering He has endured until now were not for Him. God is still shedding tears for this universe that He created, and for fallen humankind. Why is that? Because He is a God of heart. (97-171, 1978.3.15)

CHAPTER THREE

The Spirit World

Section 1. The Spirit World Can Be Experienced with the Physical Body

1.1. The spirit world and the present time

What stage have we reached now? The time has come to link the spiritual and physical worlds on the global stage. Such unification does not take place quietly, but rather both heaven and earth are shaken. The world tried to stop God from achieving it in a bitter struggle, but He won. It was accomplished at the Washington Monument Rally. Starting from 1976, the satanic world can no longer accuse God. Satan can no longer accuse God directly. He might still accuse our ancestors in the spirit world, but not God.

In addition, all the spirits in the spirit world will be mobilized to drive away the satanic forces from the earth. In this way, a foundation is formed for goodness to exceed the works that Satan has done until now. The spirit world will guide people to believe in the Unification Church. Jesus, other great religious leaders, and their own ancestors will appear to them and push them by spiritually chastising and punishing them if they do not.

The spirit world will bring together everything that was divided until now and initiate a movement that binds together all the divisions of the world today through heart; a movement that brings together the world representatives based on a standard that transcends racial differences to unite their hearts. Therefore, when the spirit world is united and makes contact with the physical world, a light will shine forth and a worldwide movement will begin on a large scale.

Until now East and West have had different spirit worlds. How was it possible to unite them? Through love. I brought together people from East and West into races and tribes centered on God's love through the joint weddings of the Unification Church.

I have laid the groundwork on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. Heaven and the spirit world are completely depending on us. (91-160, 1977.2.6)

1.2. The future age

Among the new members who recently joined the Unification Church, there are many who came because they had spiritually met me and were guided

by me. Such people may become kings or presidents in the foreseeable future – we don't know when and how. There are so many people like them throughout the world. The number of people who talk to themselves while walking will be constantly increasing in countries like the United States. The entire spirit world will swoop down upon the earth. Then, who will take supreme command? It is my responsibility. (67-77, 1973.5.20)

The time will come when you can never appear before me beating around the bush. When it does, I will completely open up the gate of the spirit world. I will be waiting in front of the gate when such a person comes and I will throw him out, asking, "Why have you come here?"

Now we will enter the era when we can manage the world professionally. What types of people are living in the world now? They are like those who lived at the time of Jesus. The era of restoration does not permit me to elaborate on this in detail yet and therefore I will not.

There are many people in the world that will perform all kinds of things in my place, though God is not forcing them to do so. Some fly in the air while others walk on water. There are many people who cross infinite distances instantaneously. There will be a time for me to call them from the Himalayas and the world of Tao. Since things are happening that way, have you wondered whether the world is going to be unified or not? God's authority will spread out and anything unable to respond to the

ideal of love in the history of re-creation will come to naught. Then we will enter a new world.

This is my worldview of an extra-sensory era hereafter and only love can bring it into reality. Once you love something in the extrasensory world, you will simply try to hold onto it. You would try to go beyond your neural limitations. Therefore, we are entering a global era when that can be welcomed on a level only by God's love.

I came to know these things in my prayer. There is something you do not know. I may appear to be unaware of everything because I do not explain much to you, but in fact I know everything.

Now is an era when we are to completely dominate the spirit world while being in our physical bodies. Since I know everything about the spirit world and possess the truth and my own body, both Satan and the angelic world must completely surrender to me. Spiritually enlightened Buddhists and Christians, therefore, must surrender to me as well.

When clairvoyants are willing to die at my command, then we accomplish the substantial realm of perfection and open the gates to the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. When such a world is created, will you have anything more to do? You will be surprised when I reveal my thoughts. A time will come when people will wonder "How did that happen? Why did I do that?" This is neither a joke nor a threat. That time will come. Such things will happen among the Unification Church members. (60-194, 1972.8.17)

1.3. Spiritual experiences are also necessary

You go about praying tearfully, “I cannot go back with this face. I cannot go back as I am. I cannot go back even if I may die. It would be more miserable than death.” If you have many spiritual experiences during your prayer, then you will be resurrected. When you go forth with that heart before you even think, God will surely help you. You should feel His heart in everything you say and teach. His heart must come before your words, not behind. Therefore you must always be humble.

That is why you must go to the back without a word. When you do so, you will feel God’s heart in front of you. Why is that? It will pull you forward all the time. As long as you are in such a position, you can educate a crowd no matter how many people there are.

There, something unknown will teach you everything, but still, since it is your voice, you hear what you are saying, yet you are mystified by the sounds you make. When you reach that state, any movement you make or any facial expression during your speech would feel normal and in tune with your spoken words. Nothing would be strange to you. Only if you work experiencing such things, will the movements of life will take place. (96-167, 1978.1.3)

To be experiencing the spirit world means to be communicating with the world of the fourth dimension. When doing that, you can connect with, com-

municate with or counsel with sages and patriots who lived thousands of years ago. In other words, you can experience and feel them directly within the sphere of time in your actual life today. (4-223, 1958.5.4)

1.4. The course of spiritual experience

Although we may be in a position to worship God who is the center of our faith, our position is unclear. Then where should we start looking for that position?

Although our subject partner is established, we cannot feel it. We cannot conclusively distinguish such a spiritual thing as clearly as we perceive things with our five physical senses. When we consider from where we should begin approaching this problem, we understand that we cannot start by looking into the subject partner. We could not possibly start by looking into God Himself. We should, to that end, begin looking into ourselves first. Each individual has a mind and body. Although we have both mind and body we cannot, however, begin to seek within ourselves for this position centering on our body. Only by centering on the mind should the examination be carried out.

When we observe fallen people today, whether a thousand or even ten thousand, do we see that their minds are the same? Although the root may be the same, the minds differ depending on the nature of their environments. Not all are the same. Why? Our faces are different,

our habits are different, and the emotions we feel are different. In the same way, our horizontal line and the perpendicular line with which we can form an angle is different. We must have the angle set correctly.

Then how should this be done? With heaven as the subject partner, we should stand as the object partner before that subject. God, the subject partner, has surely given humankind the foundation to respond to Him as His object partner. Therefore, contained within that foundation of the horizontal mind there must be a standard for the mind to be perpendicularly oriented in a direction toward the vertical. That direction surely exists.

When you look at a horizontal line, it looks like a plane but when it stands perpendicular, the standard for that perpendicular line will be different. How do you adjust to the zero point? If you go this way, there will surely be a counteraction. Therefore, you have to adjust to that zero point. In a power plant there are many different types of meters. Each meter has something similar to the zero point from which direction, power and quantity are measured. There has to be such a zero point standard.

What kind of standard is that? It is something that exists and yet does not, or something that does not exist and yet does. There is such a place. Those who practice Zen meditation use the term ecstasy to refer to a state of mind similar to that. You should be able to approach a spiritual level of that kind. Once you reach that standard, you will find some-

thing that would surely enable your horizontal standard to respond.

There is a gate in your mind and it is called the mind's gate. It does not open in just one direction. Since your mind rotates, the gate moves as well. Without going through such a gate, you as a minus cannot establish a relationship with the plus. Everyone has that kind of mind's gate. When you pray, you get a different feeling depending on the time of your prayer. Prayer at one o'clock is different from prayer at three o'clock. You will understand this when you experience it. If you pray in a deep and mysterious state, you will know that your prayer will be different depending on when you pray. It will feel different. What you feel in the morning, at noon, in the early evening, and at night are all different.

Likewise, the level of our feeling within our state of mind differs in the same way our physical senses respond differently to the changes of the four seasons. That is how it is in the realm of our mind. So you should know the best time to pray. That time will be when the degree of your response to God is greatest. As you continue to delve into that sphere, you will find the gate. When the gate of God and the gate of your mind become perfectly one and revolve around a certain standard, you will find the path to fully experience what God is feeling.

What should you do to reach this state? You need to cultivate your mind.

Some religions have expanded in step with God's providence and others in step

with Satan. Since these religions are all mixed up, it is extremely difficult to differentiate the good and bad. The same is true within the realm of our mind. There are good minds and at the same time evil minds. Your mind may think, "Yes, I am good," but that thought itself is not good. Our minds were formed as a result of the Fall. Consequently, there are some whose minds are influenced by evil and the evil realm of Satan, and others by goodness. There are all types of minds.

Then what is of utmost importance? The way you set the gate to your mind is the most important matter in your life of faith. Therefore, in your life of faith, always be alert to those times when the gate of your mind opens and how to tune it to the gate of God's mind. Always be prepared for this. You always need to have a mind-set in your daily life of seeking and adjusting your mind to God at any given time.

Therefore, be constantly aware of the depth of your mind and try to open the gate to your mind. Then try to adjust it to the place where the gate of heaven is located. This is the most precious thing to do in your life of faith. As you gradually come to stand in that object position, what happens? You will experience a new three-dimensional feeling that you never felt before. You will somehow come to experience that unknown feeling.

In the past, you may have experienced only a wintry sensation, but you will start experiencing the sensations of not only autumn but also summer and spring as well. Why? The universe

is rotating and so is our mind. Just as the rotation of the planet causes the four seasons, the realm of mind-in-motion naturally allows us to feel the changing degrees of sensitivity.

There are four seasons in a year. A day, however, is a year in miniature. There are also four seasons in a day. The morning corresponds to spring, the noon to summer, the early evening to fall, and the night to winter. In this way, there are four forms of seasons in a day. There are also four seasons in the morning which corresponds to spring. You can have springtime, summery, autumnal and wintry feelings even during just the morning. Just as large units are divided into sub-units on a large scale, small units are also divided into sub-units on a smaller scale.

Our mind is like that. In other words, the feelings your mind experiences are not always fixed. According to the seasons, it would be good to know that you correspond to spring, but you are unaware that you correspond to winter. You should, therefore, know how to discern what the present time corresponds to by having a variety of experiences and through an abundant life of prayer.

Once you are in such a state, what kinds of phenomena happen? In Korean there is the word *ahmshi* (a hint). By an example you can understand its meaning: a person casually walking along happens to see a bird fly off from the wall of a beautiful house; even after the bird has flown away, the observation of the event implicitly teaches a lesson. Such phenomena will occur. Such phenomena

will start taking place in your actual daily life. The number of these suggestive conditions will increase. You will derive insight into something as you happen to overhear someone talking. Such experiences will increase gradually.

Once past that stage, what kinds of phenomena take place? You will start receiving revelations in your dreams, but I am not talking about the ones during deep sleep. Saint Paul experienced the third heaven while half awake. Do not let such phenomena pass you by inadvertently. Compile and analyze the data scientifically to find out what they are trying to connect you to. The result will surely come out. You will gradually experience that the revelations you had in your dream – which you can hardly forget – will turn out true 100 percent in reality. You will have such experiences.

People or things you connect with in the half-awake stage of your dream are going to appear in reality. You may think you experienced having sung a song with someone in a dream, but in reality you were not dreaming, you were actually singing that song with someone at your side. Such phenomena will happen. What this means is that your mind has entered a realm in which it resonates with the spirit realm like a tuning fork. You should regard such things as very precious.

Then, what will happen next? As God exists, where will He appear? God will appear not in the air but through your mind. Why have not you been able to experience that? Because your mind is not yet firmly established in its own

existence and because you have become people who are being dragged around by your body. Once your mind is firmly established within its existence and forms a higher dimension of character whereby you can declare it to be another subject entity, the situation will surely be different.

When you reach a higher level through prayer, you will start talking with your mind. A state of resonance will occur. It will be on a higher level, and you will physically hear what you are saying in your mind. You will advance to that kind of state. During the first stage a hint or suggestion in your daily life will be given. Therefore, believers must collect the vast amount of such facts.

When coming into contact with people, do not treat them offhandedly. Always wonder if they can teach you something. Always be hungry in heart. Have a seeking heart that expects to receive something from those people. After all, what is the self? You are always either a subject or an object partner in a relationship. It means you are in a fixed position either as a subject or an object partner. Therefore, when a being appears who can become your subject or object partner, you will know it immediately. If you have people to witness to, you will easily know what kind of people they are. Your mind would go to them out of joy, by way of thought waves. Every mind has its own wavelength. A butcher smells of meat and a dealer in fabrics smells of cloth. Just as your body has its own smell, your mind has its own unique smell. A form of sensing the smell of the mind

will take place.

Our body has something similar to the sense of touch that makes contact with everything. Your mind emits something like invisible electronic waves to look for its own object. Therefore, believers must think that everything is in a reciprocal relationship with them. Why is that necessary? Because we have lost all kinds of relationships due to the Fall. The Fall severed our ties with nature, with the original human being, and with God. In order to reconnect the world of the severed relationships you must always endeavor to get yourself connected. Those relationships can be pioneered only when you take such action. Without such an attitude, you will never succeed in pioneering in a relationship.

All of you must have the heart that is seeking something. After praying in the morning you should be able to sense that something good will happen that day. Do not think that something good will happen on its own course, but actively start looking for whatever it is. This type of attitude is what you should have in leading a life of faith. Therefore, feelings, experiences and putting them into action will bring life to you. All this occurs during the half-awake state.

If your spiritual level goes higher, what will happen? You will start receiving revelations and directions. You have to analyze revelations. Directions are given directly to you by someone, but it is different with revelations – which is why they lead to problems. You must always interpret revelations. Some revelations

come verbally and others visually. You could have a vision of a couple of deer drinking water from a spring and then glancing at a mountain in the distance on a nice spring day. Such a vision symbolizes boundless hope and happiness. All such phenomena will take place.

Such things are not accidental. Heaven is doing this to help you to cultivate the field of your mind. Why does it have to be so? The field of your mind is not flat, like a sheet of glass – it is uneven. It is in the form of a flat surface but the shape itself is uneven. So when a heavenly ray hits the uneven plane of your mind, it will be reflected towards a direction opposite to the incoming ray just like the refraction of light. Visions, therefore, are all different. God works in such a way to enlighten each part of your mind.

After the stage of revelations, you enter the stage where you have experiences such as those found in the Book of Revelation. In this stage you enter the spirit world and have various experiences all day long; you get connected to a far-off world. You can reach the limits of a state where you feel God in your daily life. Unless your faith is based on such experiences, you cannot apply the resultant realm of God's great will to the field or sphere of your daily life. Therefore, believers without such experiences cannot be trusted. Faith based on such experiences is important. For this reason, you must make an effort to enlighten yourselves.

While our members are praying, spiritual phenomena are taking place.

Such things called spiritual phenomena do exist. The spiritual forces enter our bodies like electric power. You would know if you had these experiences; you will experience a force stronger than your normal awareness entering your body, as if you were in contact with high pressure. When you experience supernatural and superhuman emotions, your body will certainly reject them, since your body carries the fallen nature. Your body will surely come to repel this divine nature from God.

Therefore, if some kind of godly nature flows strongly into fallen humankind, fallen people cannot be purified in a natural way. When this power flows in, it does not come in at once but enters in an alternating plus and minus manner in the way sound waves are transmitted with alternating amplifications and attenuations. This power comes in sometimes strongly and sometimes weakly, all the while cultivating us. You will have vibrations, lose your consciousness, and the phenomenon in which spiritual forces act strongly takes place. This is manifested as spiritual phenomena.

What will happen next if you continue having such experiences? Your physical body and your physical fallen nature will become purified, and through this you will naturally come to accept these works 100 percent. When that happens, even without such phenomena you can enter a state higher than the spiritual phenomena and then receive all that heaven teaches while not being overwhelmed at all. You have to go through these courses to reach that level of puri-

fication, as well as the phases of receiving revelations and directions.

Once you reach the level of such experiences, your mind will give you directions. You will be struck dumb when you try to talk to someone, or you will scold someone in spite of yourself. You will experience such incomprehensible phenomena from time to time. Therefore you have to be able to control them. If you mishandle the situation, people may treat you like a crazy person.

It is absolutely necessary to go through such a course of experiencing these things. If you enter the position of having had experienced through the trials of life, by feeling and experiencing that which entered your mind, you will become stronger. You will not be affected by anyone's comments. Understand that both spiritual experiences and their realization are of the utmost importance in your lives of faith.

What should we do to enter that state? Generally, there are two types of people. The first type consists of so-called intellectuals, who search for truth. They only accept things that stand to reason and reject anything contrary to it. The other type consists of people who grasp things by feeling rather than reason. In the Unification Church they are called the intellectual and the spiritual people respectively. Whereas intellectual people look for external understanding first and then try to apply it to the internal world, spiritual people look for internal feelings first and then try to apply them to the external world. We may call the former the incoming type, and the lat-

ter the outgoing type. These are the two types of people.

Since that is the case, intellectuals generally do not like prayer. When they think about it, it looks like superstition, it cannot be trusted, and it makes them feel that their own existence is going to be denied. Those are the intellectuals – they seek to find truth by forming theories. Spiritual people, on the other hand, are born being fond of calling on the name, God. They just like God for no particular reason and do not require any explanation. They do not mind skipping meals as long as they can call God, Father. Such people exist.

Generally speaking, in spiritual movements, which type of people do you think are successful in creating a revolutionary movement? Intellectuals cannot do it. Those who have accomplished great things in the realm of faith were not intellectuals but were mostly simple and uneducated – they were spiritual people.

They live true to their feelings and do not care about the world. They do exactly what God tells them. There will arise occasions in which what they are doing turns out to be exactly the right thing to do in that situation. As a result, they turn out to become great figures in history. Saint Paul was originally an intellectual, but since he was struck by spiritual lightning from heaven on the road to Damascus, he changed his mind and went on by faith instead of his head. He felt that by searching internally one found an explosive path rather than by searching externally, which led

him to deny everything that was external and to start respecting things that were internal. Through this, he became a standard-bearer of the new Christian revolution.

Such being the case, those emphasizing reason cannot play a role as great leaders of the religious world of the spirit. There are two types of people. You should know which group you belong to. Spiritual people in general are usually not great at reasoning, though they are great spiritually. They may start out strongly, but they become weak later on. Then, since they are not consistent from beginning to end, they do not last forever – they surely drop out at a certain point. On the other hand, those who are good at reasoning and truth but poor spiritually can also never last long. Therefore you have to make an effort to coordinate these two aspects in your daily life.

It is said that you must worship in prayer and in truth – in spirit and in truth. This means that you have to create a balance and enter a state of harmony. People should mediate between the spiritual and physical worlds. You should stand in the center of the spiritual world and be the people who can meditate standing at the center of the world of truth. Otherwise you cannot attain the perfected position. (76-125, 1975.2.2)

1.5. How to develop your spiritual senses

If you long to see someone, even if a wall is placed to stop you from seeing that person, there will be occasions

where you climb over that wall. Such things will happen even if I keep quiet. This is because the spirit world fills up that gap. When I was imprisoned in Heungnam prison, I did not witness to people with words. I witnessed to people without words. The same holds true for you. The spirit world was mobilized to help me, because otherwise something terrible would have happened. The same holds true for you. So, if you are going to the countryside, you should mobilize spiritual support in the same way. I have been to every well-known place in the sixties.

Think about who you are going to meet today on the road. Think about what kind of person the first person you meet will be like. What about the second? What about the third? At the same time, you should pray to God, "What kind of person will it be? I would like to meet such and such a person today." You feel good if your thoughts and prayers come true, and through such experiences your spiritual senses will develop.

When that happens, as soon as you go out on the street, you will start feeling you are going to meet such and such people today. A person's spirit is able to connect with others without limit. You will be surprised if your intuition on what kind of person you will meet that day becomes reality. There are many instances in which what you think and the intuition given by the spirit world will often become reality in perfect accord with each other. You have to grow through the accumulation of these experiences. (30-150, 1970.3.21)

1.6. Advent (substantial works)

The body and spirit, originally, are supposed to become one centered on true love, not false love. Consequently, they cannot become one without finding the source of true love. You have to go beyond this level and proceed looking forward to receiving heaven's blessings.

Why is it that the more lonely the place you go, the closer you are to heaven? When you forget about worldly love and enter the realm of heavenly love, heaven comes close to you. Heaven will directly appear to you and relate with you. You will be in God's direct dominion. Since you would not be aware of God's presence even if He appeared, I came in His stead. You should live in the realm of God's direct dominion. (91-183, 1977.2.6)

What kind of relationship do you have with me? You should see me during your prayer and in your dreams every day. All Unification Church members throughout the world must have such experiences. You have to know about the spirit world. You must be able to see me in a vision even when wide awake. There will be someone who can do it. This is the first time in history for such phenomena to occur. It is unprecedented and will never happen again in the future.

These experiences should gradually gain strength. Before Adam and Eve fell, they were not free from God's intervention. In the same way, I have to step into your individual lives and guide you in all matters. If you follow my directions and do everything with joy and excitement

you will enter that realm. Although I asked you to do the most difficult or impossible things, if you are determined to do them with more joy than I have, you will immediately enter that realm. If you step forward to accomplish them at the risk of your lives, I will immediately come to guide you. (91-173, 1977.2.6)

Our Unification Church members must receive spiritual guidance from me directly during their prayer or in their dreams. Already many members can receive my spiritual guidance directly, no matter where they go.

Many wonderful things will occur that are more real than those at the time of Jesus. That is why Unification members are in a position to attend me directly. In the church you will from time to time experience something greater than that which the people had in Jesus' time. That is why the world will be able to become one with the Unification Movement.

In order to pass through the realm of death today, we need to offer our prayers with the resolve to die. It is not enough for you to pray for only an instant. Pray for twenty-four hours. People who are unable to have such experiences or live without being able to attend me personally in such an era of freedom are pitiful.

By having such standards and experiences Blessed Couples originally should be connected to such content. You are supposed to be entitled to be Blessing candidates only after being spiritually engrafted to and united with me. (31-330, 1970.6.7)

We talk about God's heart. Where does it exist? In your prayer, you will hear a voice saying, "Listen to Rev. Moon. Do not make him sad. Make him happy." That is the only way. God will speak to you like that. People say that when they sacrificed their sleep pining to see me, the spirit world would open up to them. That is why it is important to have spiritual experiences. (76-152, 1975.2.2)

Section 2. What Kind of Place Is the Spirit World?

2.1. The spirit world and the physical world

2.1.1. The center of the spirit world and physical world

You must be concerned about the spirit world. Today there are many religions in the world and their path is to search out the world where we can live eternally in relation to the spirit world, a world of eternal life, a world where we can live together with God. That world is the destination of religion. However, what has become of religion nowadays? It is on the decline and we have entered an era in which people are concluding that religion is only for the weak, and unnecessary for everyone else, or that it was created by people as a moral idea.

Even Christianity, the central religion, has declined. America represents all the Christian nations of the world, yet those who grew up in American Christian homes have lost their faith and are living according to their own ways. Why

are Christians abandoning their religion which idealizes Heaven, the dwelling place of God, who is the center of the world and all ideals?

There are three reasons. First, it is because they do not have a clear understanding of the existence of the spirit world. As we have the innate capacity of comparison, we seek to abandon a bad situation in favor of a better one, ever in search of higher-dimensional realms of greater value. That is original human nature. Second, it is because they do not know God. Third, it is because they do not know that love is central and binds us to both God and the spirit world. They do not know these three points. Even though they might know of God and the spirit world, they do not understand that it is a world centering on love.

In a place of love, you are happy to go up or down, and even to stay in the middle. Does a wife dislike her beloved husband if he has a higher position in society than her, or does a husband dislike his beloved wife for being in a lower position than him? In unity, you can go anywhere, from below to above, and vice versa – you can even stay in the middle. There are no restraints. Thus, many people in the world call for one unified world of peace. (91-140, 1977.2.6)

The same holds true for the spiritual and physical worlds and for spiritual and physical beings. God and His love are central to both worlds but not to the fallen people who we usually have in mind.

We have a mind and a body that exist

in different dimensions. The mind differs from the spirit world. We speak of the spiritual and physical worlds in terms of God's love. Accordingly, for both of them to unite, God must be involved. Without God's love being involved, the spirit world cannot exist. It is linked to God.

We have a conscience. How does it differ from the spirit world? How do the mind and the spirit world differ? People may think the mind is the spirit, but they are confused about that. Due to the Fall, the mind has nothing to do with the spiritual world. In other words, the mind of a fallen person is like a boneless body. This gives you a realistic idea if you think of it taking that form.

The spirit self has a spirit body and a spirit mind. The latter corresponds to the spiritual world. It definitely relates to God. Therefore, without establishing a relationship with God, the spirit mind will not come into being. Understand that spirit and mind are two different things. The fallen mind has no relationship with God – He has left it. God Himself can neither relate to our mind nor control it directly.

Your mind changes, going one way and then another, but the spiritual world and spiritual beings do not. They set one eternal goal toward which they constantly move. Why is this so? It is because they stand on God's side. The mind that resides within us as human beings vacillates.

You may have learned it from studying the Principle, but what is the spirit mind? It is the union of mind and spirit,

and it is moving toward its new goal. It is a motivational mind that can make us become our ideal selves by uniting with our conscience centered upon God. Thus, if we did not have a spirit mind we would be unable to search for its origin which can connect us to the spirit world and true love.

When the spirit mind sprouts up in us, our body experiences joy and everything follows it. Everything starts to unite automatically. Our biggest problem has been the separation of our mind and body. However, when spiritual energy comes into our body and creates the origin of our spirit mind, our mind and body become one naturally. Unless a revolution occurs at the root, and unless we discover the origin that can rectify everything from the root, we have no way to find the ideal. There is no result without a motivating cause.

The purpose of religion is to implant within us a spirit mind. There are many religions centered on the spirit mind. There are all kinds and forms of religion.

(91-140, 1977.2.6)

2.1.2. Unity of the spiritual and physical worlds

God is a majestic being. Hence, the spiritual and physical worlds must be unified. In the absence of true love, however, they could not. Consequently separation took place between our mind and body, and between religion and politics. Everything comes together as one centering upon true love. Everything – the individual, family, society, nation, world,

and cosmos – will be linked. We have to make it with our own hands. Otherwise, we cannot inherit God's original kingdom in heaven and on earth.

How do we unify the spiritual and physical worlds? It is through true love.

(216-101, 1991.3.9)

2.2. The spirit world clearly exists

Eighty percent of the world's population does not know about the spirit world. Even believers are unsure about its existence and that of God, but it is there.

Imagine a wealthy person who is prepared to invest all assets into creating a garden of happiness. With that in mind we can inquire into how God, the Creator of heaven and earth, created His dwelling place. The spirit world is a world of beauty beyond our imagination. You will never get tired of looking at it, regardless of which part, for even a thousand years. The world's most prized possessions are nothing by comparison to even a corner of the spirit world. Therefore, I do not want to own this earth, that is to say, I would rather go back because it does not conform to my purpose. (15-149, 1965.10.7)

Most people even now do not think about the spirit world. They live because they were born, they serve their parents because they are there, and they live in their family because they were born into it. They live thinking that the reason they live this way is that they were born this way. What is the center of such a lifestyle? It is about how people should

eat and how they should live their lives. That is why people consider food, shelter, and clothing to be the most important elements of life.

The issues of living, feeding and clothing are central to most people. Of course, there are contents of morality and morals within human relationships that enable people to improve, develop and to find satisfaction together. However, the standard of that morality varies, as do races and nations. Moral standards and social systems all vary in accordance with the world's diverse cultural backgrounds.

From this point of view, the original standard which people should follow throughout history and the existing moral and ethical standards that we adopt in our lives are scattered in all directions. They have not been systematized into an integrated whole. Based upon being born and living in the original world, where should we be headed? People are not clear about this. Because of this, ordinary people do not know whether the spirit world and God exist.

However, our Unification Church members clearly know that the spirit world exists. They do not just believe it – they know it. Why? They know it through countless spiritual experiences. Viewed against the backdrop of the global foundation the Unification Church has established today, we have evidently undergone a process of many spiritual experiences. Therefore, Unification Church members are in no position to deny the existence of the spirit world. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

What path should Unification Church members go? They must follow the one God desires. They must follow the path of God's will. What is God's will?

There is the path of God's will that individuals must go, and the path of God's will that families must go, and also the path for the society, nation, world, and spirit world. I am the specialist. The spirit world definitely exists. (121-146, 1982.10.24)

What consequences arise from the existence of God and the spirit world? Some people may think that we have nothing to do with God even if He exists, but they are wrong. Disavowing the spirit world despite its existence is tantamount to disavowing the family, nation, or world despite being a part of them.

Thus, since greater God and the greater spirit world exist, we will desire to enter into a relationship with them. Rather than just being linked, where do we go from there? We should become one. We have to move toward a single purpose. (104-118, 1979.4.22)

2.3. The spirit world is the driving force for faith (Saint Paul's vision of the third heaven)

In the Bible, Paul explains about the third heaven, which he had seen fourteen years earlier. How did he live during those fourteen years? He carried on for fourteen years, gaining strength from his experience of seeing the third heaven. He knew more than what he

talked about then, and that enabled him to go on even after talking about the third heaven. (62-45, 1972.9.10)

The Apostle Paul's experience of seeing the third heaven of the spirit world became the driving force that empowered him in his missionary activities for fourteen years. Do you understand? You must have such experiences. That also holds true for me. (27-128, 1969.11.30)

I do not fear death. What made this possible? Love did. I can digest even being put in jail. Thus, I must digest and conquer today's adverse circumstances. I will conquer everything with my own hands. (202-27, 1990.5.1)

2.4. When God created the spirit world

The spirit world is equivalent to the angelic world. Today's world is in the same position as that of Adam and Eve. God created the spirit world before creating Adam and Eve.

Since the satanic world came to exist because the spirit world went against God's will, then that world can be restored only after the spirit world welcomes God's will. Also, the Lord cannot come to the earthly world unless he subjugates the spirit world.

That is why the Unification Movement has worked until today to subjugate the spirit world and, consequently, the spirit world must help the Unification Movement. (25-233, 1969.10.4)

2.5. Where is the spirit world?

Where is the spirit world? It is in your bodies. Thus, you go around with the spirit world on your shoulders, attending it – there is no escaping it. The spirit world exists. It exists for this world, and this world exists for the sake of the eternal world. People may question, "Where in the world is God? Can there be a god in this world? Where on earth is the spirit world?" God's dwelling place is the spirit world. (117-306, 1982.4.11)

2.6. What kind of place is the spirit world?

If we could be finished with life after seventy to eighty years on earth, we would not really have any problems to worry about, but as we will be living eternally, it is a different story. As the spirit world exists, and you are going there after death, what is there to think about? The spirit world is a vast world. You have no idea, but it is a vast unchanging world.

On earth, there are racial discrimination, cultural clashes and other contentious issues. In spite of life's frictions, people want to maintain their assertions and values, which do not pass away but live on vividly when they go to the spirit world. (187-285, 1989.2.12)

The contemporary interest in electricity and space exploration act like lubricants in creating an ideal world of love. In the same way, the spirit world is the world filled with the electricity of

love. There is nothing we cannot do with the electricity of love. Hence, we can say that the spirit world is a realm we can govern by our way of thinking.

Then, what is the spirit world? It is a place that desires eternal elements. It is the world of harmony, where everything is filled with love. Thus, this universe gets into operative mode by just a push of a love button.

What is God's Kingdom on earth? It is the place where all the love bulbs light up. Then what about God's Kingdom in heaven? It is the place where love bulbs can light up completely.

As long as you keep a loving heart and pull the rope of love, everything will follow. When you pull it back, it goes backward; when you pull it sideways, it moves sideways. You can steer it any way you like. It does not resist, but moves automatically. Thus, we can find this concept that the spirit world is the place filled with the air of love. If the God of love, who with the heart of love, wants to feed all humanity at once and to make them happy, says, "Let there be food," then food will appear.

You eat the food of love in the spirit world. You look at each other with the eyes of love. There are no words to express the mystery of the spirit world. The more you hear, the more you want to hear. There is no concept of being sleepy or tired there. The spirit world is the place filled with the electricity of love. Therefore, people today try to link everything to love. Why? This is to be in sync with the spirit world. Since the spirit world operates in this way, exist-

ing beings cannot but respond to that. They cannot abandon that position.

When you see me in your dreams, I appear to you through the waves of God's love. For that to happen, your ego should not be there. You have to sacrifice yourselves and create a vacuum. After creating a vacuum, you have to become like pure gold. Gold does not contain any other elements. It is pure in itself.

(112-16, 1981.3.15)

Section 3. The Content and Situation of the Spirit World

3.1. The Fall led to ignorance about the spirit world

The human body consists of almost one hundred trillion cells. Our ancestors have died and gone to the spirit world, but within our body are cells passed down that have received their love. The cells connecting to life have been passed down – connected through the lineage. They are still alive and moving.

When autumn comes, the leaves fall. New buds come out in spring. A garden becomes green in summer. Likewise, we human beings are born from numerous ancestors through our blood connection. Although we are their descendants, we are meant to live our lives representing them. Centering on our ancestors' true love and drawing upon their life energy, we are to pass down their lineage. Thus, your grandfather and grandmother are the beings into whom your ancestors are compressed. It is they who represent your clans and your families before heaven.

Then what about your father and mother? They are the center of your family. They represent all the fathers and mothers of all families in the present world. The grandfather and grandmother represent the past and the father and mother represent the present. What about sons and daughters? They are the future descendants who can be unified with God's eternal ideal world – the heavenly kingdom – and can complete the unification of the cosmos. Your family is holding your son and daughter as the starting point of your family. Therefore, the family is the compressed unit of the representative of the past, the representative of the present people of the world, and the representative of future descendants living in one place. That is why the family that has not fallen stands in such a position whereby it can communicate with both the spiritual and physical worlds.

Just as the love within the parent-child relationship is cherished in the physical world, if you live with such love on earth, you will attend God as your Parent and live your life in heaven as His child. (214-268, 1991.2.3)

3.2. The spirit world is a sphere permitting instant perception

In the spirit world, anything can be known instantly. When meeting people, even without an introduction, you will know their names, whether they lived eons, or million, or billions of years ago. It is such a speedy world.

When I have to pinpoint the solution

to a difficult problem within a triangle, my finger and body already know where that point is. That is why you should always be focused and go about with the right mind-set.

In meeting people, do not think of taking advantage of them or trying to use them for your benefit. Never do that. If their original character is crushed, it will take half a year to three years to repair it. That is why your actions are crucial. If you take advantage of others, you will be placed in a more hellish place than the usual hell. Those who understand such consequences do not even think about doing selfish deeds. (204-304, 1990.7.11)

Satanic blood is still flowing at the base of our being. Satanic love has been rooted in our body. That love flows through the blood vessels in our life and is meshed into our nerves. From there, our body, which consists of one hundred trillion cells, was formed. We have to lament by our own initiative the miserable plight of sustaining this life together with satanic blood. We should be determined and resolved to destroy this satanic life hundreds of times over during our lifetime.

Can you embrace and love your own body? Can you walk around like a mad dog dragging its muzzle saying that you are hungry? Can you approach your spouse to satisfy your lust centered on your body?

When entering the spirit world, you will not require an introduction. You will understand as soon as you meet others.

You will know that the person you meet used to live on earth some millennia ago or some million years ago. Some say that biblical history goes back six millennia, but I say they are talking nonsense. They do not know the spirit world.

Biblical history actually spans millions and tens of millions of years. If we call for our ancestors of those days, they will all appear at once. As soon as you see them, you will understand each other tacitly. Your whole being is on display. You will immediately know to what order each of you belongs – whether higher or lower. Therefore, introductions will be unnecessary. The order is automatically determined.

Love determines the overall order and each person's position. So you cannot enter the heavenly kingdom without becoming God's sons and daughters.

In order to connect with God's love, you have to get onto the vertical line. What does the scripture about loving the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind mean? The center of everything is love. So, when you do nothing but concentrate all your functions and consciousness on loving the Lord your God, you will go straight up to the vertical realm taking the elevator. It is a wondrous world. (208-141, 1990.11.17)

3.3. The center of the spirit world

What is the center of the spirit world? It is a world structured and centered on the One Absolute God, the originator of the universe from the beginning. There

is nothing He has not created. Since all things belong to Him, they feel as He feels and exist in relationship to Him. For example, the human body consists of one hundred trillion cells. When any of the cells at any part of the body feels something, it directly relays it to the brain. It is the same for all creatures that have been connected to their Creator since the universe was created.

What is more, we are born and live with consciousness, pursuing goodness and higher value as well as experiencing the grief of others? All these attributes did not originate from human beings but from the origin of humankind. We can say that human life is a process of going towards the resultant world which leads us to the origin. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

3.4. The organization of the spirit world (hierarchy)

Why is the spirit world still incomplete? The hierarchy of the spirit world was originally designed to be connected centered on God, True Parents, and true children, but that hierarchy does not yet exist in the spirit world or on earth. In other words, the organization of the spirit world is to be the hierarchy centered on True Parents, and at the same time the philosophy heralding the Adam untainted by the Fall, but it has not been established yet. So far, the center of the hierarchy has been occupied by the Buddhist group, the Confucian group, and the Muslim group.

Thus, in the spirit world, the Muslims, Confucians and Buddhists have

all been hoping for the appearance of the true parent-centered ideology and the philosophy heralding Adam. Since both worlds must go in a unified direction, when the work of the True Parents on earth reaches the global level, the boundaries dividing all the religions will disappear, and a unified movement will automatically appear according to the motions in the spirit world.

Then, what happens when the teachings of the Unification Movement become a global ideology? All the spirits will be absent from the spiritual world. As their purpose must be completed on earth and subsequently revert to the spirit world, they all have to return to the physical world. All of them will become active. Countless spirits in the spiritual world are hoping for the Unification members that are spread across the world to take action.

Then what is the center of the hierarchy in the spirit world? First it is God, second True Parents, third true sons and daughters, and fourth the true nation. True children are children who have inherited the direct lineage from True Parents. They all branch out centering on the nation to become its citizens.

Who should be the first to live in the heavenly palace? Who will govern the heavenly kingdom sitting on the throne of the heavenly palace? Adam and Eve should have become the true parents centering on God and were supposed to be in that position of governing the kingship of that heavenly nation. It would have been realized if they had not fallen, but because of the Fall it did not

materialize. Thus, true parents have to emerge and move into that position.

The spirit world operates under this kind of principle. So how long do you think it would take for such phenomena to appear in the physical world? Centered on God, true parents have to emerge, then the true children, and finally a true nation with true citizens. (161-222, 1987.2.15)

3.5. Clothing, food and shelter in the spirit world

Would you skip breakfast tomorrow morning because you had breakfast this morning? You will keep crying out, “Oh, food!” until your life ends. Likewise, you have to eat God’s words every day in the spirit world. That is why you have to train yourself on earth. Your hunger for knowledge, even after going to the spirit world, will push you to ask, “What words will God speak to us? What do they mean?”

Think about it. Do you expect to find bakeries in the spirit world or not? What about cola and juice bottling plants? No. Would there be auto-manufacturing plants there or not? When you get there, would you go around saying you are going to move about in a luxury vehicle? Here people boast of owning a Benz, but over there, there is no need for all that.

What will you be doing over there? Will you be eating or not? You will. Based upon what will you be doing that? Because love will be central to eating, people without love will not be able to open their mouths however much they

want to eat. That is the law. Their mouths will not open if they love themselves and are not focused on loving everyone. Even as they try to pick up food with chopsticks to bring the food to their mouths, the chopsticks will move away. Thus, in the spirit world everything is possible only when you have true love and everything is impossible if you do not.

What I teach is the tide of love. It is a tide that reaches God's throne in heaven all the way to His heart. It flows to all nations and enables you to connect with everyone.

If a nice house in the spirit world is inhabited by someone ranked lower than yourself, you can make it yours. This will be naturally known as you enter it.

By becoming God's sons and daughters, you will come to own the entire vast universe. In the spirit world, you will not be able to follow me around because the gates of your hearts are narrow. True love can flow freely, whether through a wide gate or a narrow gate. Love must be true. (207-93, 1990.11.1)

The spirit world is our homeland – the original homeland. This earth is the homeland of the original body and the spirit world is the homeland of the original heart. The next place to go is the world of heart – the spirit world. Thus, only by training ourselves on earth to adjust to the spirit world will we have no difficulties upon arriving there. (207-72, 1990.11.1)

There are neither cars nor food in the spirit world. Like God the Creator, we

will be able to create all sorts of things through true love there. You can make anything through love. When you call out for some instrument, it will appear at once. When you order food for several hundred thousand or even millions of guests at a banquet, it will be served. If you stipulate a golden dress code, it will materialize instantaneously.

We will not be sleeping in the spirit world. That being the case, we will be able to dance the night away with total abandon. Spiritually we will be filling ourselves with eternal enjoyment. The air there will be the air of love, the food there will be the food of love, and the clothes there will be the garments of love, and all these will be provided by the True Parents through true love. (217-293, 1991.6.2)

On earth, food is one of life's concerns. Thus, manufacturing plants for automobiles, fertilizer, garments, food, and so on are needed. People make a big fuss over food at home. In the spirit world, all that is unnecessary. Cars and planes are not needed. In the twinkling of an eye, infinite distances can be crossed. Spiritual energy travels faster than the sunlight created by God, and it travels three hundred million meters per second. God's original love energy and life energy travel infinitely faster than that. If you wish to meet with someone light years away, that person will appear right away. Even in heaven, which is vast, when you prepare your heart and say that you would like to meet someone you loved, that person will appear

on the spot.

Those who used to live millions of years ago will appear and greet you. How much has changed over the past millennia? People who used to live then could sense heaven much more deeply than those who live now.

Yet it is the other way around from the perspective of civilization – our spiritual senses develop along with its advancements. Greater knowledge leads to a corresponding increase in overall understanding and penetrating analyses. Thus, the foundation to attain extra-sensory perception is expanded. Then the spirit world will naturally teach in advance the wise ones concerned about the future of the world. They will understand through spiritual waves what will happen. Those who reach the highest position will see but one goal at the end.

(206-138, 1990.10.3)

3.6. How to use knowledge and power in the spirit world

You can make as much money as you want in the spirit world. God is the King of knowledge. Knowledge, money, and power are but some of the values people pursue during their physical life. Can professors boast of their knowledge forever? Can they go around showing it off? It lasts only a lifetime. Your knowledge is with you only during your life and the same for your money and power. Thus, do not boast of your knowledge, money or power. God regards them as valueless. They are all valueless in the spirit world. (203-291, 1990.6.27)

We should know God. He must be a god of personality, He cannot be obscure. As we are people personifying intellect, emotion and will, then our subject partner, God, must also be the deity personifying intellect, emotion and will. What is the central attribute of God among all His many attributes? It is emotion. It is love. God too needs love most to live. You do not live with knowledge in heaven. Things are the way they are because you do not know the spirit world. However, once you are there, it will take less than a week for you to learn everything. In the spirit world you can look into people's minds as you see reflections in a mirror. The spirit world is a world of intuition where, within a week, you can surpass the knowledge of any intellectual, however distinguished or great.

By seeing things through the light of your heart, you will automatically understand the world and all its related connections. Only through the heart of love will you understand whether someone is your object or subject partner. It cannot be done through knowledge or any of God's other attributes. (210-311, 1990.12.27)

In the spirit world, if you just say with a strong heart of love that you want to see someone an infinite distance away, he can appear. If you ask him, "Why have you come here?" he will reply, "Because you called me." If you ask him, "How far have you come?" he will say that he came from light-years away. The spirit world transcends space. The universe becomes your base of activity.

Yet we have things tied around our necks that do not exist in the spirit world, namely money, knowledge and power. Not even one of those things exists in that world. Not even one of them will endure. Money, knowledge and power are needed in this world, but not in that world. Yet, in the satanic world, people desire them.

The spirit world is a world devoid of power consciousness. If you are require power you will be unable to live anywhere in the spirit world. Nothing in the spirit world will welcome you. You will not be able to own anything even if the spirit world itself becomes interested in you and tries to unite with you. Essential opposites cannot become one. They cannot be linked to a position in which the spirit world can have interest. (205-128, 1990.7.29)

God created everything for love. If you ask Him what He loves most, what do you think His answer will be? He has no favorites. He does not need money, knowledge or power. What do we Unification Church members need? The same thing. Love contains money, knowledge and power. Its power is everlasting. People who understand true love will not have anything to learn in heaven.

Such people can go in and out of God's heart anytime. They can move freely in all directions through His body. His heart is like a central terminal. Why do we need it? As you enter and leave it, you emerge with tremendous power because energy from all directions gets concentrated there. Even lowly people

will be elevated to the same position as God as they emerge from that central terminal. Love has such great power.

What is knowledge? Through it, you can own everything around you. If you have only love, which is the highest form of knowledge, everything in the world will connect with you. Knowledgeable people rule. It has been said that knowledge is power. It is logical that powerful people rule. That is why people with love do not need knowledge. They will know everything in the spirit world even without learning.

As I know all these things clearly, I do not want to live on earth. Everything in that vast world is intertwined with love. Everything is complete if you come to own the realm of God's heart harmonized with that love. The history of creation will continue forever. You have to accomplish what you have planned by harmonizing yourself with that heart of love. Once you determine and command it, it will unfold at once. (202-86, 1990.5.6)

3.7. Human relationships in the spirit world

God is the Creator of heaven and earth, the very Parent who happens to be the origin of all beings in this world today. He is the source of value of all beings. By virtue of His existence this world of phenomena began.

Such an absolute being does not change according to contemporary trends; absolute things do not change. He is not limited by time and space. He transcends and thus presides over all

limitations. We should not simply call such a being God.

He is our Father. You are to call Him Heavenly Father. He is the Father who begat you. The Fall gave rise to the word rebirth, but He is the Father who originally begat you. Your physical father is the father who became the bridge. You will call him brother in the spirit world. You will not be calling your physical mother mom either.

What do all the people who were born of their parents call God? They all call Him Father as the Christians do. In the same family, the grandfather calls God Father and so do the father and the grandson. That goes for all members of the family. Likewise, God is Father to all humankind. Accordingly, all people are brothers and sisters. I sometimes think that if that is really the case, then things will be quite interesting when I go to the spirit world.

As all people are mutually related as siblings, who would be the closest ones in the spirit world? Not the horizontal ones. Which relationship is closer in this world: between parent and child, or between siblings? Since the parent-child relationship is closer, even after you pass to the spirit world, you will be closest to your parents, then to your grandparents and then to your great-grandparents, and then your great-great-grandparents above them. When you trace the vertical line all the way up, who is the last grandparent? He is, indeed, God.

That is why you do not have to feel lonely saying that you have no friends in this world. You do not have to feel sad

because you lived by yourself before you died. When you go to the spirit world, you will have an unlimited number of close siblings above and beside you. However, you will not become their sibling just like that. You can become their sibling only when you have attained the privilege of attending God as your Father.

I do not feel bad about calling my father and grandfather my elder brothers. Somehow, when you think about it, you might feel bad. You used to call him daddy while on earth. He might be terribly offended if you were to call him your brother in the spirit world! Yet, that is how you will have to address each other. Why does it have to be like that? Because only in such a position can you become the son of the direct male line. If that is the case, you may ask, "Since there is but one son of the direct male line, how then can everyone occupy that position?" In the spirit world, everyone can become the son of that line. Centered on God, everyone can become its descendants. When a rich man dies in this world, his assets will be inherited by his children. Then, it is customary for half to be given to the eldest son of the direct male line and the rest to be divided by the other sons.

Nevertheless, it is not like that in the spirit world. Since all people in the spirit world have to become descendants of the direct male line, God does not have to divide His assets among them. Once all siblings become one, what is your elder brother's is simultaneously yours. So it is important that all siblings become

one. As you seek to trace your lineage back through the generations, they will be numbered differently, but if all the ancestors of the direct male line become completely one, the descendants who come after them will inherit the universe. In other words, they will govern the spirit world centered on the children of the direct male line. (21-248, 1968.11.24)

In the spirit world, grandfathers and grandmothers will look more attractive than you. You can live in such a world if you have love. It is a unified and very beautiful world. Who is the grandfather of your ancestors? The first grandfather is God. (216-180, 1991.3.10)

When you go to the spirit world and look at a man and a woman, they look like one great person. What are people? Each of you is like a cell. The whole universe will look like a man and a woman. That is how it will look. The universe is the result of them combining. The people within the universe are like God's cells. They are parts of a body. (207-97, 1990.11.1)

3.8. The center of the spirit world is love

3.8.1. The air of the spirit world is love

How is the spirit world structured? Its air is love. Love serves as air. On earth, your mind and body must experience the sensations of love as the elements that can be harmonized. Once you create the sphere of experiencing those

elements, there is nowhere you cannot communicate with each other instantly, just like the tree sap that flows from the bud to the root of a tree. You will naturally sense when God is rejoicing. You will know that God's banquet is going to be held in the East. (162-287, 1987.4.17)

In the spirit world, there are screws of love, as well as machines of love, and shafts. To use a metaphor, there are shafts in rotating motors. If you completely unwind the shaft, what is unwound is love. The shaft rotates for the sake of love. There is no need to worry about achieving the harmony of that order. When you live centered on essential love, you are like a cell wherever you go in that world. (126-238, 1983.4.24)

Love is the air you breathe in the spirit world. Only by establishing the way of love can you become the substantiation of hope longed for by God throughout history and be welcomed everywhere you go in Heaven. Thus, your family is the training school enabling you to go to heaven. It is your training ground. In the world there are people like your grandfather and grandmother.

It is the same by extension – extending the age brackets of your mother and father, your spouse, and your children. People who extend what they have learned in their family in all directions and can live for the sake of others within the sphere of love can go to heaven. The family is the training ground from which you can go straight to heaven. It is like a base from where satellites can

be launched – like Cape Kennedy. Your family is the place from where an atomic bomb of love or a satellite of love can be launched. (143-71, 1986.3.15)

3.8.2. The spirit world is the place of living a love-centered life

In the other world, spirit people live centered on love. That is why you should share the blessing of love with many people. You have to shed tears. People shed tears in good moments and bad. What is the difference between laughing and crying? We open our eyes when we laugh and close them when we cry. Laughing hard brings out tears. The shape of one's face does not change much. The only difference is the eyes. (212-166, 1991.1.6)

Henceforth, only art will remain. People who cannot write love poems are failures. (211-245, 1990.12.30)

Where is the core of the universe – the core of love? The core of love exists. Some years ago in America, a new elementary particle called *upsilon* was discovered. It is said to be humanly inaccessible. In this regard, we are coming to the stage in which the spirit world will be officially and automatically recognized. That is an amazing fact. I think that it is a good opportunity to have something that should be scientifically provable but is not. It sets the stage for the beginning of the four-dimensional world. As the material world reaches its boundaries, the spirit world becomes clarified automatically. There is no boundary. Is there

a boundary between the spirit world and our heart? Our heart resembles the spirit world. Our senses differ in degree though not in kind; consequently, we are called spiritual beings. (83-209, 1976.2.8)

Once we go to the spirit world, through the power of true love, we can meet people, however distant, in the twinkling of an eye and likewise zip back to our hometown, however distant, to visit our loved ones. The spirit world is a limitlessly expansive world, but through love we will be able to go back and forth over infinite distances instantaneously. Love travels at the highest speed. Without the foundation of love-centered, mind-body unity, we would have nothing to do with the spirit world. Accordingly, the origin of unification is not something that happens in the objective world, but rather begins in you. (216-192, 1991.3.31)

3.9. The spirit world – the world of heart

What kind of place is the spirit world? Because some people say that those who speak about the spirit world are lunatics, I hesitate to talk about it. What kind of world is the spirit world? It is a world where anything is possible if you have a heart at the same level as God's. (106-227, 1979.12.30)

The world of heart is the world of boundless happiness, but you will have to undergo countless steps of training and re-education. While undergoing endless ordeals, you will have to go forward step

by step, over eons. Everyone is destined to go through such a course, whether from the East or West. Be people who shed tears for others, not for yourselves.

So do not hesitate. Rather, challenge fate by saying, “Go ahead. I am ready to die. I will carry on even unto death. Come on. Do what you want. I will die with such a heart. Even if you kill me, my heart will not die. I will take it with me to the spirit world and engraft it there.” Standing on God’s side, you will say, “Are you going to invade the realm of God’s heart? You can invade Satan’s realm of heart, but not God’s. Isn’t that the heavenly law?” Satan dominates the realm of heart of the satanic world, but he cannot dominate God’s realm of heart.

Thus, once the satanic world is assimilated into God’s realm of love, the spirit world will also be assimilated. Then, this world will become the Kingdom of Heaven where no one will be blocked from entering any of the twelve pearly gates facing the north, the south, the east, and the west. All will be welcomed. Why? Because, through God’s heart, all can become one and be harmonized anywhere. (106-229, 1979.12.30)

The ideologies and philosophies of this world may have formed a stage in revolutionizing our consciousness in terms of the standards of our conscience, but from now on something that can bring the destined and final victory must emerge. That is none other than heart.

Henceforth, there must emerge a new view of history that can revolution-

ize the heart of humanity to enable the establishment of the standards of heavenly law. Based on this view of history, there has to appear a heart-based principle that can establish a new view of life and worldview. Then what principle is it? It is one centered on a heart-based view of life, a heart-based worldview, and a heart-based view of the universe. This is the very thing the Unification Church is teaching. (16-251, 1966.6.19)

3.10. The situation of the spirit world

Those who can become object partners to God, the God who is harmonized through the ideal of love, can instantly materialize all their thoughts in the spirit world. It is the world where you can instantaneously throw a party for a zillion guests. If you want to please God as the object of His love by dressing up gorgeously, it will happen right away. It is a world where everything imaginable is possible. Those who know the spirit world have no zest for living on earth. That is why even being cast into jail did not bother me at all. This momentary life on earth is like taking a single breath in the eternal world. (211-244, 1990.12.30)

In the spirit world, you will be flying around. Since true love has the highest speed, the God of true love can, in one hop, zip across the vast universe 22 billion light-years wide. You could all do the same. However great the universe, it will become the sphere of your activities in the spirit world. (213-277, 1991.1.21)

You will have nothing to envy in the spirit world. The incarnation of love cannot be compared with diamonds, gold or pearls. Jewels will not matter. The incarnation of love is more beautiful. (201-99, 1990.3.11)

When meeting artists in the spirit world, you will be able to catch up with them by instantly developing all your artistic inclinations. It is a world of limitless possibilities. Thus, you will have all the facilities you will need there for singing and dancing.

Even in drawing, God is the best. Would He hang up a masterpiece painting on the wall and gaze at it, or would He behold His own created masterpiece in action? Which do you think He would like? His creation. What's more, you will never get old in that world, that sublime place where you will be intoxicated with the heart of love.

Life would be boring if every day were clear. Misty days and nights, when we can see the moon with a halo, take away the boredom. Just observing the various and unique weather changes from clear to cloudy taking place all the time on earth is itself an artistic activity. This is the world of art; it is an artistic world. (201-102, 1990.3.11)

3.11. Life in the spirit world

How is life in the spirit world? You will not have worries about what to eat, where to live, and what to wear. Why not? According to your spiritual state, everything you wish for will become reality.

We will be eating there, too. There, we will also be able to feel the flow of our blood and the beat of our pulse. We will have spirit bodies, but it will work the same way.

Whenever we want to eat something, it will appear ready to be eaten right away. Where will it come from? The spirit world is a world in which we will be able to exercise our independence actively in enabling the mobilization of the original world. As such, what is it that has the proactive authority of activity that can mobilize everything? It is neither power, nor knowledge, nor money. It is love.

However high up God may be, if you call out to Him with a heart of love, "God!" the answer will come from within your heart, "What?" You then ask, "God, where are You?" and He will reply, "What do you mean, where am I? I am at the core of your heart." God is the Origin. He is at the core, the root, of your heart. Intoxicated with love, when you give the command to actualize what your intuition tells you, it will unfold just the way you want. People going to the spirit world as bachelors or spinsters will have a difficult time. Such people will not be able to harmonize anywhere they go. It will be the case whether they go to the world for women or for men. They will have no group to belong to. (194-42, 1989.10.15)

3.12. The work we have to do in the spirit world

What will happen after we die? Dying does not mean that life is all over.

A son who has inherited the love of his father is always welcome in his house and anywhere he goes. That is the principle. All the spirits in the next world will welcome him. The spirit world is an eternal world. Someone who wears himself out for the sake of love all his life and subsequently dies at a ripe old age will nevertheless be born as a handsome young man of love in the spirit world. He will be a being of boundless eternal life who will forever sing the love songs of adolescence.

What will you be doing in the spirit world? What will you have to do in that nation? Will you be trying to earn money there? Will you need clothes and a house? Everything you want will be instantly provided. The spirit world is a world in which you will be able to settle everything according to the degree of your love.

If you order anything you desire, it will appear right away. However, if you ask for it just for your own good, it will not appear even if you make a lot of noise and raise a disturbance. Conversely, everything will instantly appear if, as the heavenly prince, you say that you need it for the purpose of attending the King. Anything imaginable is possible in the spirit world. (129-99, 1983.10.1)

What are you going to do in the spirit world? You will sing songs of love and speak words of love. If you are spoken to in an operative way, you will have to respond likewise. If you are spoken to through a dance, you will have to

reply that way. You will rejoice eternally and never tire. When dancing starts in one place, it will happen everywhere in heaven. When singing starts in one place, there will be singing everywhere. In the spirit world all your organs will constantly be working. What will we be doing? What will enable us to be happy without any sleep eternally? Love.

All we need to do is have that ideal of love. What would remain to talk about in the spirit world if love were removed? You are meant to live there centered on love, the original love. Because I knew about such a world, I could overcome any difficulties on earth and detach myself from anything I used to love. I can cut off from them ruthlessly in a way normal people cannot. We use that standard to evaluate everything. (107-331, 1980.6.8)

Section 4. The Position and Actual Situations of the Spirit World

4.1. The position of the spirit world

What you need to be thinking about in this era is the spirit world. As yet, the spirit world corresponds to the angelic world. We Unification Church members stand in the same position as Adam and Eve before the Fall, that is to say, we are living in that realm. Viewed from the spirit world, it is identical to paradise appearing on earth. (54-228, 1972.3.24)

Since the spirit world transcends time and space, even the sorrow of the

past six millennia remains forever within the realm of the historical ages. If you felt joy in the experience of offering yourself, then even if it occurred as a part of your daily activities, that experience will never be forgotten for the rest of your life.

With the passage of time, it will broaden and expand so that you can become an object of reverence and be connected with the infinite origin. If you have such holy experiences from now on, and act upon them, you will be able to know that the sorrow God has been experiencing until now is not temporal but rather continuously connected. That is an undeniable fact. (29-294, 1970.3.12)

What is the one thing to be done in the world of humanity? The light of love must be bright. For that to happen, you must catch fire internally and externally. From what? The motive force to love. In the light of all this, all the things of this world are a rest house you pass through during a trip. (194-55, 1989.10.15)

4.2. The actual state of affairs in the spirit world

When you get to see the spirit world, it will all appear as one large person. God, the Subject, and that large person become one. When this occurs, the whole spirit world and the physical world will jell together as one.

When God jumps, so will the earth. When He laughs, so will the world. That is how it is. When you go to the spirit world, you will see that it is structured

like a person. (91-279, 1977.2.27)

In the spirit world, there is no place you cannot pass through, because there is nothing that obstructs movement there. Being the place where God's original character exists, it is not made to be obstructive. Everything is made to be permeable. As it transcends time and space, people who lived eons ago exist there even now. Thus, you will be able to see such people as often as you wish. They appear the age they want.

So explanations and excuses will not be necessary. You will have foresight. You will know whether someone is ranked below, beside, or above you. You will know the love rankings of zillions of people.

Those rankings are absolute. Highly-ranked people will naturally stand in the right places according to their ranks. It is different from the physical world. People who got promoted by scheming and backstabbing will be upended. It will be the other way around. Look, therefore, to the true way. (194-132, 1989.10.17)

4.3. The pride of the spirit world

What will old people need to do in order to walk the way of God's will in the future? How can the physical body be reinvigorated as it ages, as its physiological functions are increasingly curbed and as it becomes decrepit? I am researching this. What should we do if the body keeps weakening when it needs to unite with the spirit to be active? I am now in the midst of providing for this.

Then, what is the problem? You have to start anew. To do that, discover something new every day. People who do will never become dropouts. They are never discouraged by difficulties. On the contrary, they relish the challenge.

What will you be proud of in the spirit world? You will be proud of the number of lives you have saved. This is your pride. Going beyond the ordinary people and your tribe, the number of lives you have saved among the numerous races by linking them to new life will form your assets. Those will be your only assets. There will be nothing you will miss in the spirit world since it has everything. Still, if there is anything you might miss, it would be true people.

Thus, those devoted subjects who sacrificed to raise true people will naturally be able to become the glorious sons and daughters of heaven. Therefore, that will be the only thing in which you can take pride. (30-147, 1970.3.21)

In the spirit world when you enter the place where the bell of love rings in your heart, the light of your heart will grow steadily. This light will shine brilliantly in all the five colors. In God's eyes, it will look brighter and more beautiful than a diamond. What is more, its light is not just good, but also tasty. The more you look at it, the better it appears and the more intoxicated you will get. That is why God utters the word love.

Therefore, the tears you shed and the amount your heart ached for the sake of love will constitute your assets.

(103-27, 1979.1.28)

4.4. The Unification Church and the spirit world

How great is God? He is the One who created the universe. Our solar system by itself is huge.

Unification Church members are citizens of the heavenly nation with world sovereignty. Not only that, we are also heaven's ambassadors. When such ambassadors negotiate with their arch enemy, they will never compromise while following the heavenly command even if they have to offer their lives. Though living in the satanic world, we are heaven's ambassadors who take orders not from Satan but from heaven.

A huge foundation – the spirit world – exists behind the Unification Church. If a U.S. citizen living in some small village in Africa were harmed, it would become a problem to be dealt with directly by the State Department and the White House. Likewise, if we are victimized in a miserable plight in some secluded place, it will become a problem for heaven and for the Unification Church, and it will be discussed whether compensation will be claimed for damages. You are standing in such a position. Therefore, do not be intimidated. Even if you are insulted, take it and move on with dignity. (96-83, 1977.12.18)

The Unification Church is capable of mobilizing an individual spiritually as well as ancestors. Since the religions that have existed until today were incapable of connecting the physical and spiritual worlds, they made contact by harmo-

nizing vertically their spiritual devotion with rhythms and dancing. Yet now we have entered the broadcasting station itself. Our position is like a diaphragm. It is not the undulation itself but a generating transmitter. With a broadcast station, you can say, "Ancestors in the spirit world, please come and work with me. Good ancestors please come and work with me. I need such vibrations," and they are supposed to come. Individuals and families can be called and mobilized. Since the foothold for connecting with the tribal, ethnic and global realms were established on the earth, the spirits will be mobilized and come down to earth. When this happens, our bodies will be drawn into this without our knowing it. (162-103, 1987.3.30)

When you die and go before God, you will not be starting your report with the good things you have done, but rather with your misdeeds first. In this world, when people are required to render an account of themselves, they usually only mention their accomplishments without revealing their shortcomings. The spirit world is not like that. There, we must first report our mistakes. That is the order: what are first reported are the bad things.

Unification Church members will momentarily enter hell. Following that, a lawyer must be appointed to come and pull them out. This person would have to plead their case by citing their past accomplishments centered on God's will during the era of the parents, and thus pull them out. Do not live taking it

easy. If that were acceptable, why would I have pursued a lifestyle that kept landing me in jail and made me the target of finger-pointing as someone who should be beaten to death? I could not but live that way. I cannot be skulking around. (196-283, 1990.1.2)

We are splendid people. We are treading our life path with dignity, in a position enviable to the world and universe, and all the saints and sages in the spirit world. We live with an inherited background and content of achievement that prevents God from abandoning us and also enables Him to both praise us and come to us to express His love. (171-27, 1987.12.5)

4.5. Korean customs and the spirit world

The Koreans are a unique race with a long history. Korea never even once invaded other countries, although it was often attacked. Korea's survival, sandwiched as it is between powerful countries, is a miracle. It is due to divine protection.

Korean customs are quite similar to those of the Jews. When I came to understand the spirit world, I discovered many affinities between its principled ways and our Korean customs, such as those relating to childbirth and marriage, as well as attitudes toward life. For meals, Koreans always place a pair of chopsticks and a spoon beside them as the main elements of the setting. The food, prepared and served in bowls, harmonizes in plus and

minus, yin and yang relationships. Koreans organize around the number seven. There is a three day separation with each of life's major events: after childbirth, after marriage, and after death. Historically Koreans truly respect traditional things. (54-234, 1972.3.24)

4.6. The Korean language and the spirit world

When you enter heaven, if being able to speak the language of the homeland is one of the requisites, what are you going to do? You will be asked whether you speak it. This is the viewpoint of the Principle, according to which Adam and Eve's children would speak the language of their parents and not another. English is the fallen archangel's language. It is a shame. This is the viewpoint of the Principle. When you go to the spirit world, your ancestors will point at you and accuse you, saying, "Even though you served the True Parents, you did not learn Korean!" Korean is the True Parents' language. There is nothing we can do about them having been born in Korea. (128-244, 1983.6.27)

4.7. The spirit world's sphere of activity

This universe is the spirit world's sphere of activity. While the vast universe is its spiritual sphere of activity this world too, at the same time, is the spirit world's sphere of activity. On earth we can connect with that external realm, the universe. From the viewpoint of

God's providence, it means symbolically that the citizens of heaven now living on earth have reached the standard where they can always contact countless ancestors spread throughout the great universe. In the external world, this is indicated symbolically by the exploration of the universe using satellites. (196-215, 1990.1.1)

4.8. The spirit world's possessions

In observing the great universe, I am sure you will find stars made of precious stones like diamond stars. It all belongs to us. We can live with that joy. This is the ideal world where all the groups that love the universe – God's loving family – will be able to live and move together. You should join this group and become a part of that family. Those who willingly sacrifice themselves will become the leaders and people in charge in the spirit world. However, the ones who live with a lukewarm attitude will become failures there. (126-144, 1983.4.12)

4.9. God and the spirit world

Even in the spirit world God is invisible. When you go there, you will never see Him. You will be able to hear His voice, but you will never be able to set eyes on Him. However, who appears as God's proxy, His incarnation? Until now, it has been Jesus. If there is the Lord who is to come, he will take the place of God's external form. What will Jesus' position become? He will be God's first son. Jesus will become God's son. (155-319, 1965.11.1)

CHAPTER FOUR

The Kingdom of Heaven

Section 1. Understanding the Kingdom of Heaven

1.1. The location of the Kingdom of Heaven

According to the Bible, the Kingdom of Heaven is in our heart. It is not at the end of the world, but in our heart. In what sort of abode does the heart dwell? It does not dwell in a place that harbors all the elements of death, but rather one that can overcome them and disseminate life.

The Kingdom of Heaven cannot be found in the physical world – it is not of this world. As such, it starts from the point where we actualize the visions of our heart. Finding that one place enables us to welcome the Kingdom of Heaven.

That being so, the Kingdom of Heaven is not coming through the end of the world, but rather through us establishing that starting point in our heart; it is like the fulcrum for balancing a pair of scales. The purpose of a scale is to become level, but it starts out tilting towards the right and not the left. It begins with a tilt to the right.

So, the Kingdom of Heaven begins from the heart. From where in the heart does the kingdom originate? It originates

from the place where it can conquer the world. Even if the Kingdom of Heaven were to come externally, if our hearts were evil and could not harmonize with it, then that kingdom would be useless. Accordingly, the basis upon which we can welcome the Kingdom of Heaven is not something external, but rather, it is ourselves. We are the problem. The pillar – the fulcrum – that can support the Kingdom of Heaven is not our external environment, but our heart.

Jesus' disciples did not understand the reality of his teaching. In working to prepare a foundation of happiness for the coming Kingdom of Heaven, they had self-centered concerns for their position. Seeing this, Jesus fundamentally demolished this fallacy and taught that the Kingdom was in one's heart. Those who do not create the Kingdom within their hearts would be unable to contribute to Heaven even if placed in its environment. An irresolute heart cannot produce perfect action; perfect action arises only through absolute resolve.

Therefore, what matters is how much our mind yearns for goodness. While yearning for and striving to follow the path of historical goodness, we must overcome our circumstances, no matter how bloodstained and tearful they are.

However lonely the path of our struggles, we must not avoid the path. Rather, we must instead unswervingly blaze a trail with a mind to break through and move on. God's Kingdom begins from our resolution and determination to open up an environment for our body to unite with such a mind. Where the actions of the mind and body are separated, the Kingdom does not exist. Advancement towards the Kingdom begins where the mind and body are united. When they act separately, it will not come about.

In this sense, Jesus was teaching that the Kingdom would come about when we attain the self-governing character to advance with mind-body unity while ridding ourselves of the circumstances that would cause us to veer to the right or left.

The Kingdom does not come through the efforts of others but by our own efforts. Being fallen people, you must deny yourselves. If I cannot bring about the Kingdom by myself, it will then be done by someone else. If that happens, then I must unite with that person in order to reach the Kingdom. I would have to follow and keep in step with him. If he were to go east, I would have to follow. We should not think of going west if he goes east, or judge his actions. There should not be any criticism. (46-21, 1971.7.18)

Jesus said that the Kingdom of Heaven is within our heart. What kind of place is it? It is one centered on God's love – one where the environment is established centered on God's love. Then,

what kind of people would reside in that realm? They should be those who are harmonized with the essence of God's love. Only such people can go there.

What kind of people are those who are harmonized with the essence of God's love? Those who are self-centered have no value. Those who can invest their lives, all their devotion, and everything they have for their partner can live continuously in the realm of God's love. Historically, great people and saints went that way. (46-36, 1971.7.18)

1.2. Christianity and heaven

Even if people attend church for one hundred years, if they still have a self-centered mind they will never get to heaven. They cannot receive salvation.

We need to know what kind of religion is a true religion, what kind of person is a true person, and what kind of nation is a true nation. (78-117, 1975.5.6)

In the spirit world, you will see that martyrs who died for the purpose of entering heaven did not actually get there. On the other hand, there were martyrs who were able to think, "Heavenly Father walked the path of suffering and shed blood to find me. I will follow any path in order to return His grace," and then died saying, "I am grateful for this moment of glory enabling me to participate in returning this grace;" only they could enter heaven. Such people did not die for their own sakes but for heaven and earth. If you think, "I will die like this in order to enter heaven," it

is dying for your own sake. Fallen people can never enter heaven through self-assertion. (41-353, 1971.2.18)

It is stated in the Bible, “Love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first commandment.” Those who do not abide by this commandment cannot enter heaven.

What is the second commandment? It is, “Love your neighbor as yourself.” Those who love God first and their neighbor second are pious children. (198-258, 1990.2.4)

Can one go to heaven, by simply believing in a doctrine about Jesus, as many Christians say? If Jesus himself were not to fulfill the ideal as God’s partner in love, even he would not go to Heaven. Can Jesus realize true love on his own? Even God could not do so. Therefore, Jesus must come again. Will he do it by coming on the clouds? The nation that can ponder and fathom the present reality will follow me. (176-209, 1988.5.9)

Many Christians today think they are saved and will go to heaven through a certain belief about Jesus. They say that each person goes to heaven by himself. Only a few say they want to take their father and mother with them to heaven. From now, religion should not just be for the salvation of individuals.

A true religion founded by God must be able to remain universal until the end. The ultimate religion all humankind

desires would state that God does not want to have just individuals enter heaven. It should introduce heaven as being not just for individuals, but also for their mothers and fathers. When this thought is also introduced to, and understood by the tribal leaders, everyone will follow them into heaven. (41-341, 1971.2.18)

1.3. Jesus and paradise

Christians say, “Believe in Jesus and you will go to heaven,” but who will go there? Will it be individuals by themselves? Until now, there was no religion that taught about going to heaven together with one’s mother, father, and family. The religions that have existed until now gave priority to individual salvation. Yet a religion of a family’s entry into heaven must emerge. Only when the concept of family salvation emerges can the doors of heaven be opened. The religions that have existed in the past were religions of individual salvation; they could be likened to like someone rope climbing alone. Thus, the religious world emphasized a life of celibacy. Having a family was akin to having enemies. Jesus said that one’s family members were in this sense one’s enemies.

After reaching the pinnacle, one should have dominion over the earth. Single men and women have to attend the Blessing Ceremony. Originally, the Kingdom of Heaven was the place God’s sons and daughters would enter after getting married and receiving His love – the place unfallen humankind should originally have established.

Jesus went to the spirit world alone. That is why he went to paradise instead of heaven. Paradise is the waiting room before going to heaven; it is not the ideal Kingdom of Heaven that couples enter together with their family members. Therefore, Jesus has to come again to meet his bride, create a family and a people, and take them to heaven. To prepare for this purpose, God has had Jesus remain in paradise. Therefore, Jesus should come again into the world, prepare an internal principled foundation, and, then, enter heaven. These things are not done by guesswork or some vague rule of thumb.

In the future, your father and mother will be saved. The religion that can get every family into heaven and teach everyone the way of salvation can establish the nation. The nation cannot be established individually. Hence, Christianity has no nation of its own. It is a religion in which unmarried men and women create communities. You have met these Catholic priests and nuns haven't you?

In this world there are many countries where Christians reside but there is no country whose sovereign is a Christian leader, a priest or pastor. There is a stark separation. Christianity is a spiritual nation. Not having their own country on earth, many, many Christians have been killed. Had they had their own sovereign nation, it would have protected them from being killed.

Yet because they did not have their own nation, they were scattered abroad like vagrants and driven to their deaths.

In the future, we should bring all Christians of the world together and through gaining that national sovereignty we should find our common home, country, and world. That is what Christians should do. (41-346, 1971.2.18)

Not once has God or Jesus found someone whose flesh and spirit are united, whom God could totally love. That is why Jesus is still praying in paradise.

Therefore, we should know the love of God, who seeks to fully embrace our spirit and flesh. Within such a realm, we must be able to govern all of creation, having justified ourselves as God's children. You must understand that such a world is the world of dominion and the garden of rest God desires to restore. Going back to the issue of our individual selves, we, who are destined to go through restoration, must wander about seeking a new truth. That time has arrived. In the future, the issue of a true view of life and of the universe will come to the fore. (5-49, 1958.12.14)

How is it that Jesus did not enter heaven? God created heaven for people who had not fallen. People can enter heaven only when they have reached the original standard of the Principle. Jesus had meant to save fallen humanity, stand with his spouse in the position of unfallen Adam and Eve as the parents of humankind, and enter heaven with his children. Yet he came and went alone. He had no children, and thus would not enter heaven, but went instead to paradise. He is waiting to enter heaven.

Thus, Jesus must return and find his bride. In the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve originally were to get married and enter heaven. Despite the Fall of the progenitors of humanity, the rule by which Jesus must return to make the flowers bloom still stands.

By going alone, he could not enter heaven. Jesus must come again to loose on earth what was bound. Only then can he go to heaven. This is in line with what is stated in the Bible that what was bound has to be loosed on earth. (41-299, 1971.2.17)

Were it not for the Fall, heaven would have been a place to which God's only begotten son and daughter would have gone after creating His family and living in His love. Heaven is to be entered by families, not individuals. As Jesus did not form his family, he did not enter heaven and is in the waiting room, namely paradise, a place for preparing to enter heaven.

In that regard, heaven is vacant. We thus realize that God's providence for restoration has been a sorrowful history. God lost Adam and Eve. Yet it did not end merely with the loss of two individuals. The loss of Adam and Eve meant the loss of their clan. That clan would have expanded to become a race, nation, and world; but all these were lost. That being so, in losing Adam, God lost His kingdom centered on the kingship of heaven. He lost the heavenly race and tribe, and the heavenly man and woman – His only begotten son and daughter. (143-25, 1986.3.15)

1.4. Heart and heaven

What kind of place is heaven? It is where we can take pride in what we prepared during our life on earth, and in our life of attendance. Then what kind of people enters heaven? Is heaven a place for those who simply believe in the Lord and expect to receive blessings or who act only for the sake of receiving blessing? No. Heaven is the destination for those who live preparing their hearts to attend God, as well as those who can leave behind a life of attendance and joyfully move on, even if they were to die while preparing. There is resurrection there. The details of life do not appear there. How we should live from now on is the important question we should reflect upon in our life of attendance. (8-303, 1960.2.14)

Heaven is a place we cannot enter without a connection of heart. It is the original nation, the nation of original nature, which can govern everything. It is a nation that cannot be possessed based on some situation, but only by those who have a deep bond of heart. As such, Christianity is, ultimately speaking, is a religion where mutual sentiments are understood, rather than circumstances. The purpose of God's providence on earth is to make the foundation on which we can sing sharing our hearts beyond sharing circumstances.

What is the Fall? It is not a matter of God not being able to discuss His circumstances, but rather His heart. Coming in search of fallen humanity with the

heart of longing to meet His lost sons and daughters, yet not being able to find anyone who could share His heart, God has worked to find such people. That has been the history of salvation and the one sent to find such people is the Savior.

Before desiring heaven, we must desire to know God's heart; and before desiring to know God's heart, we must think about how we should conduct our lives. First, have a heart of attendance. Our original nature reveres and yearns for that which is sublime and precious. In spite of the Fall, our original heart wants to attend the sublime and precious heart of God. Therefore, those who have never been able to lead a heart-centered life of attendance have nothing to do with heaven.

To live a life of attendance we need preparation. After passing through a process of preparation, we need to then practice the life of attendance. Our destination, after preparing and practicing a life of attendance, is heaven. The destination of people who have attended with their hearts is heaven. Heaven is the world where we can be proud of our preparation for attendance and the life of attendance, and where we can actually demonstrate our accomplishments. It is our destiny to follow the course that advances toward the world of heavenly purpose.

From the day we were born with fallen lineage until the present day, there has not been even one day when all humankind attended God with a full heart. Before Adam and Eve fell, they grew according to the ideal of creation,

but they never attended God based on a relationship of heart.

What is God's regret? It is that we, who were created to attend Him with our heart, fell into a position where we could not do so, and that God, who should have received heart-centered attendance, was left unattended. God was not anguished because there was nobody who believed in or knew Him. The grief of heaven and earth is that there was nobody who could attend or relate to God in heart. (8-290, 1960.2.14)

Today, many believers say that heaven will be established only through their own religion. This is a delusion. Many religions assert that heaven will be established through their founder's teachings. Considering just Christianity, we see that it is divided into scores of denominations. One denomination usually regards a church outside their denomination as heretical or satanic. If, in actual fact, they do this from a position authorized by God, there is no problem; however, if they do it for the sake of establishing their own denomination and for the sake of satisfying their desire to perpetuate it, then their motivation is not pure. Accordingly, all such denominations will perish. If the Unification Church were like that, then it would have to perish first.

In this regard, the first consideration of religion is not to realize God's Kingdom. That is not its primary purpose. Before the Kingdom emerges, a special nation that can inherit the Kingdom is needed. God prepared His chosen

people to establish such a nation. In history, this notion of a chosen nation proves that the leading trend of thought to leave behind a good group in the evil world was always in the background of history.

When the chosen people emerge from the evil world, the heavenly nation begins to be established. For that nation's citizens to emerge, its children should first emerge. Moreover, the emergence of the citizens, and the nation, is preceded by the emergence of the family that can establish the heavenly nation. For that family to emerge, the one man and one woman whom God can guarantee must emerge.

Then, only when such a man and woman emerge, is everything complete? No. Sons and daughters must emerge from them. In so doing, the family formed by the eternal son and daughter that God can guarantee must emerge. It is an extremely obvious fact that without such a family, the tribe and race cannot be realized; and without such a race, the nation and world cannot be realized.

The stronghold that God seeks is the individual. He is erecting a fence around the individual. Thus, the purpose of religion so far has been individual salvation, but that is not what God is seeking. It is the family. As such, before the foundation for the family of the Kingdom of Heaven has been established, the tribe, people, nation, and world of that Kingdom cannot exist. (47-249, 1971.8.29)

The line where heaven and hell are divided is not determined by knowing

or preaching well from the Bible, but through actual results and heart. Ultimately, the boundary between heaven and hell is the boundary of heart and the boundary of actual results. (32-229, 1970.7.19)

1.5. The physical body and hell

Adam and Eve are the physical body of God. It is stated in I Corinthians 3, "Do you not know that you are God's temple?" So our body is a house where God can dwell. Such houses are not the bodies of today's fallen people. God does not want to reside within people who want to be saved simply by believing in doctrines about Jesus – those who have gone through the repair factory after breaking down. They should be people of the ideal of creation who have experienced pure first love, but we have departed from the realm of God's love.

What is hell? It refers to the devils' realm of love. Those in that realm only adore hatred, envy, jealousy, separation, and destruction and thus only these things are prevalent in their realm. These are manifested in wars. We must root out such devils.

What was the reason a nail was driven into God's heart? It was the devil coming into being, the fact of Satan's lineage being planted, the grievous fact of Satan's seed being planted, and the fact that the fruit of God's love bore Satan's family. The family that could have lived forever in God's love under His protection was destroyed by the appearance of Satan's family. Conversely, the fami-

lies centered on Satan's tribe spread all over the world. Now the world has about 180 countries. Countless tribes fought amongst each other and the weak were absorbed by the strong, so the number of countries was reduced to about 180. However, these countries must be unified into one according to God's will.

Where did Satan set up his base of operations? Even Satan knows God. As God is the source of the original nature of creation from whom Lucifer was originally created, he has a standard from which to reciprocate. From the human perspective, this original standard is the conscience. Whom does the conscience resemble? It resembles God. For that reason, we say that it is on God's side. Who does the body resemble? It resembles Satan, so we say that it is on Satan's side.

How much was the conscience sacrificed for the body? Your conscience becomes exhausted in caring for you day and night. Yet, tirelessly it blocks the body from misconduct. The closest being to you, which stands as the substitute for your parent, for God, and for your teacher, is your conscience. The mind itself does not need to be educated; but the body absolutely needs to be educated.

Therefore, following the dictates of your body connects you to hell, whereas following the dictates of your mind connects you to heaven. We are the dividing line between heaven and hell. Satan is straddling the thirty-eighth parallel dividing North and South Korea. Since God knew this, we are divided. If we die

without separating good from evil, we will not be able to overcome our individual thirty-eighth parallel and will be blocked in the spirit world. The thirty-eighth parallels of the family and nation will all be blocked. Then, how will we cross over the thirty-eighth parallels of the world and universe? (214-281, 1991.2.3)

You must deplore the fact that your bodies have become the devil's ballrooms. They have become the love trysts of devils. Your bodies inherited the devil's lineage through his love. You should know this amazing fact that Satan's blood is controlling you with the realm of power in order to trample upon your original character in your bodies now. There is no way for even your countries to clear this up. You will have to do it yourselves.

What is religion? Its historical struggle is essentially to fight the root of sin. Yet despite fallen people being in a domain destined for hell and having become the devil's ballroom, some people still protest the effort of religion to save society.

You have to hate your corrupted self and your body. You should understand that the blood of the enemy is coursing through your bodies and that you cannot cut this off with a knife or burn it away. You have to realize the misery of having become factories that consume and digest creation from a position where you are unable to receive God's protection. (214-285, 1991.2.3)

From the viewpoint of the provi-

dence for restoration, if you think that the present time is the time that God's final will is to be expressed, then you should reflect upon yourselves whether you are living each moment seriously. Do not have the attitude that causes you to be swept back and forth by the affairs of the world. If you never even once stood in a serious position or never had even one serious moment, you will be ashamed of yourselves before God.

When you are close to death, when you reflect upon your life to this point, ask yourself this question: "How well have I kept the public laws of heaven and earth, and how well have I lived a life in a position that heaven and earth can approve of publicly?" If you conclude that your life consists of goodness not exceeding 60 percent, you will be heading for hell.

Although your body is limited, your mind should have a history of struggle, in which you were not willing to be limited. Before heaven and earth, before history and the present, and before your descendants, you should be able to proclaim, "I am liberated; so all people should inherit my tradition." If you did not have such a moment, you are to go to hell without mercy. (19-27, 1967.12.10)

The physical world is in chaos. Then, what about the spirit world? Since confused people go to the spirit world and gather there, it also cannot but be in chaos. People who develop the habit of stealing will always end up stealing something. Thus, people who stole on earth will naturally want to get something for

nothing in the spirit world. As it was difficult to handle such people in the spirit world, hell came about.

God did not make hell. Hell came into being. People do not build their houses after making a trash can. It is after building the house that you come to have a trash can. It is the same with hell. Christians are unaware of the fundamentals. (148-27, 1986.10.4)

If you are living a false life, when will you clean it out? Don't you have such a mind? If one of your eyes loses its sight, you will have to remove it or cure it. You should be discerning. Since God exists, He must teach a method for correcting such things. That is why religion emerged.

God did not make hell out of jealousy or envy. Since false people appeared, hell became the warehouse to manage them. Do people build their houses after first making a trash can? If you bought good quality cabbage to make kimchi, but while making it you discovered the outer leaves had been eaten up by worms, you would dump it in the trash can. The Fall was committed by the progenitors of humanity.

Therefore, only someone having the qualification of the True Parents can liquidate sin by indemnifying this. (20-117, 1968.5.1)

Who is the highest grandfather in the universe? God. Then, who are the final descendants who unite this world and all of heaven and earth? The future descendants are. They have to be connected.

That which links them is the family, not the nation. In entering heaven, you will not be recognized just because you are American. You will not be rejected for being from an underdeveloped country. In heaven, only the model family that can connect the past, present, and future along with God's will, centering on this mainstream lineage and family institution, will be acknowledged. You should know that this is the formula. The warehouse, where the fruits of such families are stored, is heaven.

Until now, people who were born into this world were all destined for hell, because there was no condition whatsoever for God to be able to save them. They have been eaten by insects and worms and God could not avoid their becoming fodder for pigs or the like. He had no other option but to choose a place to store such people, and that place was hell. Hell and paradise do exist. In this regard, you know what I mean when I say that heaven is vacant. (135-118, 1985.10.4)

In the spirit world, people are allocated their proper dwellings according to their respective levels of achievement. How did they come to attain that? They stay in the position that corresponds to the degree they have practiced filial piety according to the way of love, whether they fulfilled their loyalty to their nation, and how much they fulfilled the way of saints in this world.

The path that people should take in their earthly life is the way of righteousness. Concerning this way, there is one path each for the individual, fam-

ily, clan, race, nation, world, universe, and even for God Himself. This should be the one and only path. What is that path? It is the path of original love. (147-183, 1986.9.21)

In the other world, if you are not equipped to conform to the atmosphere where the ideal of love is present, a repulsive reaction will come against you. Nobody needs to tell you to go to hell. Therefore, the Bible states, "Love your enemy!" Genuine love exerts its influence on the enemy. If this love goes to the enemy once, twice, three times and four times, the enemy will disappear for sure. It is because love has such great power that Jesus said, "Love your enemy!"

Christians today think enemy refers to an individual enemy, but that is not the case. The enemy is the one who violates the law of love, which has infinite value. Who is Satan? He is an adulterer before God. I am saying this based on what I unearthed and discovered in the spirit world. I was called a heretic because I disclosed these things. People slandered me, calling me the king of heresy who is trying to destroy Christianity, and they called for my death. However, while I am still alive, those ministers who said all this have already died. Why is this so? The will of Heaven sustained me: I still have many things to do. (121-173, 1982.10.24)

Imagine you had a son who committed murder or some crime against the state and was sentenced to death. When

he goes to his execution, are you going to say, “It serves you right”? Are there such parents? You would rather cling to him and die together with him.

If such tragic deaths were to continue forever, do you think you could just watch without doing something? If he had to suffer an eternal death, then you would want to save him even if it took you all eternity. You would try to do everything possible in order to save him. In this sense, God suffers miserably.

When God sees humankind dying in hell, He becomes desperate in an ongoing effort to save them. Only then will His responsibility as the Parent of heaven be fulfilled. If He says, “Ugh! Let’s just get rid of them all,” He cannot stand in the parent’s position. Therefore, this establishes the logic that God has to liberate even hell.

When your son sees you desperately trying to save him, he will say, “Mom and Dad are having such a hard time because of me!” and repent thousands of times for his sins. If you are such parents, your son will come to repent till his bones melt and his flesh becomes haggard. Because of your efforts, such a way can open up.

Not even Satan can accuse God for His love in trying to save humankind. There is no rule preventing forgiveness for the one who repents through the love of his parents. Hell must also be liberated through this kind of heart. That is the way of a true filial child, isn’t it? Therefore, we in the Unification Church speak of saving even hell. Why? It is because God is such a being. (62-50, 1972.9.10)

Hell is a place you can never escape from once you are caught. Despite that, you are not realizing that your mother, father and relatives are going to hell. You just think, “It will work out somehow.” However, let’s think seriously that your beloved parents are really going to hell. If your parents were to go to jail in this world, human nature is such that you would cry and do all sorts of things to have them released. Then, even more so, if you feel that your sons and daughters, parents and relatives, brothers and sisters – with whom you have bonds made in heaven – were going to go to a prison from which they would never be set free forever, how could you have such a casual thought?

You do not know anything yet. You do not know whether there really is a hell or not. It might exist but you do not know what kind of place it is. You probably are not convinced and it must be vague to you, but once you die, you will know. Once you die, you will know in an instant, but it will be too late then.

That is why the parents who died are now returning spiritually to witness to their children. During their lifetimes, they opposed their son or daughter attending the Unification Church. However, once in the spirit world, they found out that they had made a big mistake. So, they are coming to this world spiritually and are eager to lead people to the church. If they do not do this, they will be in difficulty once in the spirit world. If you oppose your son attending the Unification Church, you will be in trouble in the eternal stage of life.

Therefore, in the spirit world, spirit beings devote themselves entirely to receiving permission to become good spirits in order to appear to and to teach their children on earth. Not just any can appear freely. When people on earth experience this phenomenon they will realize what an amazing place the Unification Church is. Can you imagine how totally dumbfounded they will be!

People may say that the Unification Church is a place where people just come and go, but that is not the case. If you draw a line here, that line will stay drawn forever. If this door is closed, nobody can open it again for eternity. If it is opened, nobody can ever close it again. What is bound on earth should be loosed on earth, you should loose yourselves what you bind. This is the problem. Therefore, when you go witnessing, do not wander off to other places. (34-266, 1970.9.13)

1.6. Even people in hell long for heaven

Suppose there is a dying person who says, “God, though I did not live according to Your will until now, in my mind I tried to go to heaven. So please regard me as having established the proper indemnity conditions!” Because God is fair, He will put that person in a position of those trying to go to heaven. In what position will God place him? Since the person was trying to go to heaven, God will put him in such a position. God rewards him according to his actions. God put him in a position where he is still trying to go to heaven. That posi-

tion can be even beneath paradise. Even people in hell are trying to go to heaven. (57-264, 1972.6.4)

1.7. God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven

In order for the individual to find rest, the realm of the Sabbath for the family has to be created; in other words, a fence surrounding the family has to be made. In order for the family to find rest, a fence surrounding the tribe has to be made. If there is no fence, they can always be invaded. In order for the tribe to rest, a fence surrounding the race has to be made. In order for the race to rest, a fence surrounding the nation has to be made. Then, in order for the nation to rest, a fence surrounding the world has to be made. Thus, a time will come when we can find rest within the fence surrounding our nation and world. In order for the world to rest, the spiritual and physical worlds must be united and a fence has to be established. After that, God's Kingdom on earth can for the first time be accomplished, in which His love can spread all over the world, and His kingdom in heaven is accomplished automatically. (68-20, 1973.7.23)

The place where we want to live is the heavenly nation. There are no borders there. It does not use two languages. Racial differences do not exist there. People are all brothers and sisters because they all were born from God's bosom. In God's eyes, as His children, they are all siblings and therefore all citizens of His

kingdom on earth. They are the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

There are three prerequisites for forming a nation: sovereignty, territory, and citizenry. In relation to that, this world could not come under God's rule. The earth could not become God's nation, and the citizens of the world could not become the citizens of one nation. We talk about the Kingdom of Heaven, but it is established after these conditions are met. Since this has not been realized, the struggle between Cain and Abel continues, and we cannot rest.

We want to live – not in the process of restoration – but rather in the Kingdom of Heaven. Therefore, our desire to realize the Kingdom is about preparing our abode. Our abode will come into being only when the Kingdom is established. If we cannot establish it, our descendants will always be an oppressed race. We must devote ourselves to the utmost so as to become ancestors who do not burden their posterity. (66-281, 1973.5.16)

To get to heaven, we must go through the process of obtaining the qualification of God's sinless sons and daughters who can receive His love directly, transcending the need to believe in Jesus and the need for a savior. God's ideal kingdom will be realized when those who lived that way go to the spirit world.

Jesus has yet to see a lineage of his own. Consequently, he must return to dissolve that anguish and complete his unfinished work. Otherwise, we cannot enter heaven. Where are the conditions to open the Kingdom of Heaven? The

conditions are laid on earth. For that reason, Jesus left the key to the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

Since Jesus and the twelve apostles did not form their families, the families of the seventy disciples and 120 followers have to be restored, through the Blessed Families of the Unification Church today. If that is done, the Kingdom of Heaven will be opened. (160-89, 1968.8.11)

After creating Adam and Eve, God was waiting for them to mature so that He could celebrate their wedding feast. But because they fell, His will was not fulfilled; and they became false parents. Four millennia later, the standard of the True Parents – lost due to the inception of the false parents – should have been restored through the marriage of Jesus, who stood in an unfallen position, and his bride.

The sons and daughters born from true parents are not false children but true children. From them, the true family can emerge. With the emergence of a true family, a true tribe, a true race, a true nation, and a true world will be created. In that world, we will lead a God-centered heavenly lifestyle in the family, tribe, people and world. Only then can this earth become God's Kingdom.

After living in this way, we will discard our bodies on earth and enter eternal heaven. That place is heaven in the spirit world. This is the overview of God's providence. All people on earth were born with Satan's lineage, as opposed to God's lineage. Therefore,

according to Romans, Chapter 8, they could call God Father in the position of adopted children. Being of a different lineage, they can call God Father by laying down a bridge, without which they cannot directly do so. Yet only Jesus had the relationship of the direct lineage of God. Thus, he was called the only begotten son. (160-42, 1968.8.11)

When the day of the Second Advent arrives, a new ideal realm should be created, not in heaven, but at the bottom of paradise and hell. There, Cain and Abel will be restored, and God's realm of the new family will be created. Everybody on earth must be restored through indemnity through the realization of the realms of God's new tribe, new race, new nation, and new world. Cain and Abel must be restored, all things must be absorbed and digested, and then a unified world on the earth must be created; failing which, there would be no way of dissolving the anguish and completing the unfinished work by fulfilling God's desire of creating the heavenly nation.

That is why Jesus said, "Whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven." God's Kingdom will not be established in heaven without it being established on earth. This indicates there is some extraordinary circumstance, and that without establishing on earth the sovereignty of the heavenly nation, the good sovereignty cannot be recovered in the spirit world. (143- 29, 1986.3.15)

Do not think of only going to heaven, but, also of building heaven on earth. Before that, you yourselves must become heavenly people. To do this, you must become one in heart with the Father to the extent that you can confidently say that His heart is yours and yours is His. Accordingly, in this earthly life, you should be people representing the hearts of God, the Lord, as well as your ancestors. Only by doing so can you solve all historical problems. (3-294, 1958.1.19)

1.8. The right view of heaven

No matter how strong a storm and wind may come, even if you are destroyed and dying, you should have a firm and resolute conviction, saying, "At least this conviction is absolute. If there is anything wrong, the fault lies with me, but God's will is absolutely right." It would be exceedingly foolish of you to dream of heaven while maintaining a faith wherein your belief in the morning is different from that in the evening.

What kind of path is the path by which you can approach heaven? It does not appear in a self-centered position. When you find that you are far away from heaven, you have to smash that which is called the self to pieces. Only when you denounce the self, will the path that can open up to heaven – or an indirect heaven – be opened.

However, those who try to make others adapt to themselves while asserting themselves, or place themselves in a proactive position and force others to follow them, will be unable to relate to heaven.

It is obvious that the realization of the Kingdom of Heaven starts with us. Even if the relational Kingdom were established, if we could not become people who are responsive to that Kingdom's call, we would have nothing to do with that Kingdom.

What kind of place is heaven? It is the place we go after subjugating Satan. It is not where we go by overcoming ourselves, or just the self. Heaven cannot countenance the realm of the fallen world or our habits or the habitual circumstances of the fallen world. As Satan chronically controls our habits and resides here, heaven can come only after we overcome those circumstances. Heaven will be realized at the place that mutually contradicts the contents of Satan's world. If any remnant remained, it could not be heaven. If such a place bore the name heaven, it would be nothing but a deception.

The concept of heaven can be established from the position of subjugating Satan, of denying and, further, eliminating everything to which he can relate. Heaven is affirmed on the basis of having denied and removed the negative historic relics of Satan and all the contents of a satanic lifestyle. Without removing those, we cannot present the contents of heaven.

Heaven is such a valuable thing. Although described as being aligned to the absolute standard, there is too much confusion over our concept of it. People are longing for heaven from an extremely self-centered standpoint. There is no doubt about that. Only when we over-

come these circumstances with absolute faith, can the Kingdom of Heaven emerge; yet that alone will not settle the Kingdom. It will be realized only when we subjugate Satan, who brought God hardships for millennia and deceived humanity.

There can be no two ways about it. God's Kingdom cannot be realized through just submissively going along by faith. It can never be realized by having only a believing heart. Since Satan always challenges us to battle, the Kingdom is realized through overcoming that course of struggle. Here, we need sovereignty and numerous citizens. A large number of families should create a state system and overcome this battle for the sake of one purpose. In God's position, they must be able to be in harmony and unison anytime, anywhere, with their subject partner without any conflict. We may be able to feel in our mind the Kingdom of Heaven at the place where we are prepared to die and where we have faith, but that is not the substantial Kingdom. Even though a great price of martyrdom and suffering has been paid through the past two millennia, the Kingdom has not been accomplished in the sphere of reality. Thus, the Kingdom is not something that simply comes into being.

In the biblical phrase, "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind," the Lord refers to one who is unforgettable and eternal. He is a being of absolute content. The Kingdom does not come through our believing in the Lord God, but through our loving Him. The

Father's will is fulfilled not only by faith, but by love.

We need to realize how much our faith falls short and how far it has deviated from the Principle up to this time. Some of you may be here for the first time. With regard to the individual, you cannot go to a place where you can receive consolation. Although the Kingdom might exist in your minds and although God may have felt joy from you, that would not mean it has been established on earth. It might be an individual Kingdom of Heaven, but it would not be the Kingdom of Heaven in its entirety.

What God desires is not the individual Kingdom of Heaven. He does not rejoice over seeing its realization. Can we say that the Kingdom of Heaven is established just by seeing one person's joy? God sent Jesus Christ – the one person over whom He could rejoice – to the earth, to be the center for all nations to connect horizontally in seeking the Kingdom in its entirety. He thus sent the Messiah to the earth and sacrificed him.

(46-74, 1971.7.25)

Section 2. Preparing to Go to Heaven

2.1. The stronghold of heaven

The closer we are to the truth, and the more we come under its spell, the more it will become our center which nobody can snatch from us. Even if the earth were to fall into chaos millions of times and the universe were suddenly destroyed, people whose minds are

securely centered on the truth will never be changed or shaken.

However, if you cannot be prepared to accept such a center in your heart, however genuine a truth may appear, you would not recognize it. Even if true life appeared, you would not be able to know it. Even if true love appeared, you would not be able to understand it.

If today's Christianity is seeking genuine truth, true life, and true love, it must completely deny itself to the end and become a religion that establishes the mind's center that nobody could snatch away.

When new continents were being discovered, it seemed the earth was gradually expanding. Now, however, the earth seems to be shrinking day by day. In other words, when civilization was not developed the world seemed huge, but as history and civilization developed, the world seemed to be gradually shrinking. In this regard, we can know that the ideal world, realized through the history of the truth, will be of the universal era when everything is forming direct ties with us.

Our standard as the citizens of heaven – that is, the life and love of the Kingdom of Heaven – must bear fruit within us. Because truth, life, and love are like one family, love and life should necessarily follow truth. Life and truth should necessarily follow love. And likewise, love and truth should necessarily follow life.

Why are truth, love, and life connected to one another in this manner? As you know, in order for a thing to exist,

there should be above and below, front and back, and right and left, centering on it. No existing thing can escape the realm of the number three. This is the fundamental form of existence.

Likewise, these three elements get together and make the unified form. However, if a force proceeds in the reverse way, an action of the force different from the original one occurs. Accordingly, God is the origin of love, life, and truth. Yet after the Fall, people failed to form a triangle that holds love, life and truth in equilibrium. Thus, God could not fulfill His will. (2-133, 1957.3.17)

The disciples following Jesus thought that he would dominate the Roman Empire instantly and become the king of Israel, and that they would come to hold high positions. Such things are not an issue. First of all, we have to make the foundation for God's Kingdom within our mind. And then, centering on that mind, we should make the foundation for unity between our body and God. This is the foremost issue. The Kingdom begins from us. Hence, our mind is its stronghold. (47-272, 1971.8.29)

Where is the stronghold of God's Kingdom? Many Christians say, "I believe in Jesus so I'm going to heaven." Then where is that stronghold? When Peter asked, "Where is the Kingdom of Heaven?" Jesus answered, "It is not in heaven but in your heart," so where is that stronghold located? Can it be formed by a sad heart, or by a self-aggrandizing mind, or by a mind that

denies society? Those are not the strongholds of the content we desire or of the Kingdom that God can endorse.

People seeking the stronghold of God's Kingdom must meet with solitude more than anyone else on earth. Why? As God is solitary, they too must be solitary; and since God has undergone the history of subjugation, they too must undergo subjugation.

Then, if people were to just feel sad, repent and shed tears of lamentation because heaven and earth are filled with sadness, can that become the stronghold of God's Kingdom? Even that cannot. When serving the church, while desiring the time of being blessed anew with joy, we must be able to be determined to solve the problems of sin and evil in this world. Without a single direction of determination to bear that responsibility, the stronghold of heaven cannot exist.

Some people confidently assert that – because they are conscientious and have a respectable social position – the Kingdom of Heaven starts from them. That thinking is based on their understanding that good and evil begin together. Yet good and evil cannot start simultaneously. When evil goes east, good must go west, and when evil moves, good has to stop. Moreover, when evil has a desire, good must not have it. Good and evil are opposites.

The search for the heavenly nation started from the point where God lost all His hope in relation to the world of humankind. Thus, people who are satisfied with their present lives cannot

be truly religious people. When confronted by the intersecting fortunes of life and death, which cause you to sink into despair, losing the meaning of your existence, you should not be excessively attached to your habitual lifestyle, but instead proceed to seek new values, denying even your life. By proceeding in this way true goodness can start.

Viewed from this standpoint, are there people who can confidently say that their character is the stronghold of heaven? None. There is also no one who can insist that their family is the stronghold of heaven. There is no one who could claim that God, if He existed, could not say that He did not recognize their family. No tribe can insist that God must recognize it because of their good achievements. There are no races, nations, ideologies or philosophies that can demand God's recognition. When I think about this, I am dumbfounded.

Therefore, while the one who wants to die will live, the one who wants to live will die. Then what does that mean? Those who work to protect themselves from the evil world for more than a millennium can dream such a dream, and only those who gratefully sacrifice themselves for more than ten thousand years can find hope to live for ten thousand years.

Likewise, those who cry out for eternal life, eternal happiness, and the eternal Kingdom of Heaven must overcome the current situation with eternity as their goal, and they must surmount with endurance the present point in time, sacrificing themselves. Only from such

a standpoint can the eternal stronghold emerge. (47-247, 1971.8.29)

2.2. The standard for going to heaven

Without loving God, we cannot free ourselves from the satanic realm. Thus, we must love Him more than our spouse. From the snares of love within the satanic realm, fallen people have emerged as far as the edge of that realm, but they have yet to come out of it completely. Hence, we cannot love our parents more than God. (41-299, 1971.2.17)

What kind of people can enter heaven? First of all, those people who are in harmony with God's mind. To what extent are they harmonized? As God works towards the eternal ideal based on His eternal purpose, our minds must be in harmony with His for eternity, not just for a decade. Our minds must be eternally in harmony with the eternal God. To achieve that, what must we do? We must become the children who can eternally like and be liked by God. To become such children, we should not appear as objects of sadness.

Next, we must be in step with God's body. Here, 'body' means direction. While thoughts represent the central point of all directions, the body is manifested by the direction it takes. To be children in step with God, when He goes east, we must go east with Him. If God liked something warm, but Jesus liked something cold, would it be right? If He wanted to laugh and chat, and Jesus

wanted to sleep, would it be right? Everything manifested through the external body must be in step.

Would everything be all right with just that? No. When God is being amiable, we should not be hot-tempered. If He is amiable, we should also be amiable. The internal and external must match. Would that alone make everything work out?

Next, we must do things that are in line with God's will. For that to happen can there be things we are reluctant to do? Can there be things that our bodies detest? We must do things that both our mind and body like to do. As God exists, there must be things that He likes. Also, as Jesus is God's Son, he also has to like such things. (47-255, 1971.8.29)

We can never go to heaven without sacrificing our lives. If you could go there you would see for yourselves whether anyone there did not do that. That is how it is with the essence of faith. (37-248, 1970.12.27)

2.3. The starting point of the Kingdom of Heaven

From where can the Kingdom of Heaven begin? Without dissolving God's anguish, we cannot enter heaven. Since we have woven a history of sorrow since the Fall, we must restore all its ties. All the ties of the six millennia since Adam and Eve have to be restored. The Unification Church Principle teaches about a God of such sorrow.

Secular people detest sorrow and run

away from it. The Unification Church Principle teaches about God's sorrow, which is more miserable than any other sorrowful situation. If something sorrowful happened in the world, most people would avoid it and run away from it, but the motto of the Unification Church Principle is to go through such places of sorrow.

All people in the world try to avoid sorrow, but they are originally not supposed to be like that. The more we understand God's sorrow and the contents of His misery, the stronger the force that actually emerges in the Unification Church to dissolve His anguish. That force becomes the motive of unlimited explosive action. This is the great force of the Unification Church. (21-112, 1968.11.17)

2.4. The essence of the Kingdom of Heaven

What kind of world is the Kingdom of Heaven? As it is the original world, individuals, families and tribes accused by Satan cannot go there. To enter heaven, these must all become one – in other words, three generations must become one. In Adam's family, Adam was the first generation, Cain and Abel the second, and their children the third. These three generations were to become one. From God's standpoint, He was the first generation, Adam and Eve, the second, and Cain and Abel, the third. (21-54, 1968.9.1)

As heaven is the world of living for

others, we must go forth making that notion our first consideration. Those who have the idea of being served will be destroyed.

Heaven is the world filled with God's love. The essence of love is not to be served, but rather to live for the sake of all. Thus, heaven differs from the secular world.

The religious teachings of living for the sake of others, being absolutely obedient, sacrificing, and serving, do not exist in the secular world. They are perceived as games played by groups of beggars who know nothing of this world. Yet this was God's secret strategy against Satan so that people could be blessed even if they were ignorant of heaven's laws. (46-40, 1971.7.18)

2.5. The framework of the Kingdom of Heaven

We have not restored the original homeland. As such, we have lost the homeland of our original hometown, by which we mean God's Kingdom on earth. When speaking of God's Kingdom, we are referring to that which is on earth and that which is in heaven.

Three major elements are required to establish a nation: first sovereignty, next territory, and then citizenry.

Yet God has no sovereignty over which He can govern. He has no people whom He can govern. This amounts to not having a homeland. This is not the world in which original people should live. (155-25, 1964.10.6)

Section 3. The Prerequisites and Conditions for Going to Heaven

3.1. The prerequisites for going to heaven

3. 1. 1. Suffering is needed

What remains forever is the suffering you underwent in leading a public life. If you undergo such suffering and subsequently face ruin in the spirit world, it will be all right to confront me with the matter. Those who are beaten up while working for the sake of the race, the world, and the cosmos, are wise people. (19-29, 1967.12.10)

If the person responsible for a nation were captured by the enemy and then given preferential treatment, his people would scatter. If instead, he suffered a miserable death his people would be inspired to remain together. We can, therefore, create unity with the spirit world by going through difficulties. The more we suffer, the more the spirit world will relate to us and stand together with us.

If we just carry on in a casual way, the spirit world will do the same. In this sense, God unfolds His strategy through Satan and He lets us suffer unrelentingly. Sometimes He lets us get killed. Death itself is pitiful, but the reaction creates unity. (49-108, 1971.10.9)

Those who wish to enter heaven must live, die and depart miserably. Are these good words or bad words? They are good

words. The words, “Go out and die witnessing to people!” are also good words. Die for the sake of others. If you die, not for yourselves, but for others, for the world and the universe, you will be raised up as masters of the great universe.

The creation, human beings and God are very precious. Those who sacrificed and risked their lives to embrace the world from the position of goodness are essentially sacrificing for the sake of those three precious things. God has to compensate them with something more precious than that which they sacrificed. From such a standpoint, Jesus proclaimed, “Your family members are your enemies,” and “Those who seek to die shall live, while those who seek to live shall die.” Otherwise, people cannot go to heaven. This lesson from Jesus was the most blessed lesson. It was the most dear and most precious lesson. It was the most indispensable and absolute gospel.

Thus, the Unification Church does not teach us to live rich and comfortable lives on earth. We may live exceedingly poor lives and undergo unbearable hardships, and die on the streets so that even dogs avert their eyes from our corpses, but the day will come when flowers will blossom at the place of our death. At that place every holy person will gather to create a capital city. My thought is to have Unification Church members undergo tremendous hardships for the nation and world in order to make them devoted children and loyal subjects of God. I shall chastise those who are unwilling to go. Pushing you to

overcome your current tragic situations and difficulties, even if it requires kicking you, is a sign of my love for you.

Jesus’ first commandment, not his second, therefore is: “Love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind!” Jesus’ second commandment is, “Love your neighbor as yourself!” Who is your neighbor? The people of the world are your siblings and neighbors. You have to invest your heart and soul, and offer your life for the people of the world. If you do so at the risk of your life, you will have done your work. Die once for God’s will.

Where shall we die? We must find the place of our death. If you were born as a bomb, you should be dropped on rocks and explode cleanly. Do not waste your energy in a sewer. Consider yourself as a bomb already released; your goal is to land on a rock. As formidable beings, pit your strength against that of formidable enemies. Because I made such a resolution, though past fifty, I have not yet complained about the long distance to cover and I do not hesitate to keep going.

In order to realize the hope of tomorrow you should devote yourselves while shedding tears. You should exert your entire effort and mind, passion and devotion. My mainstream thought, as the founder of the Unification Church, is to go forward without regard for my life in order to create that one point of unification that can correspond to this goal. Adventure can be experienced both on and off this path.

We are now unfolding a ruthless and

bloody fight. If a foundation for which you risked your life survives, it will be a model for history, and a foundation for the happiness of the world's people. The entire universe will regard that foundation as the starting point of harmony. It will be a point for an axis and the unfolding of a great movement, a place which could move God and bind together the hope of humanity. Those who live in such a place will feel the cosmic responsibility; they will make everything stand still during their times of inaction and activate everything during their times of action. They will never be small-minded people. (49-303, 1971.10.17)

Those who are on the way of truth should walk the path of death until the day they die.

We need to go that way during our lifetime in order to indemnify the suffering, which would normally have to be paid after death. Through suffering on earth we can reduce the period of atonement necessary after death, and that period can be measured in eons. We are walking the way of truth on earth to indemnify the suffering course that otherwise would be walked for eternity. (31-320, 1970.6.7)

3.1.2. We need love

We go to heaven on the tracks of love. When I explain it like this, doesn't it seem real? The line of love will not become thin when pulled, as a rubber band does. Where a rubber band becomes thinner the more it is pulled, the more the line of

love is pulled, the thicker it becomes.

In this sense, becoming the number one person of suffering for the sake of God's will is the secret method to occupy the world. The most suffering person monopolizes the glory of the Kingdom of Heaven. (57-162, 1972.5.31)

Religious people today say, "Let's go to heaven!" But how can they expect to go there so easily? They must first receive heaven on earth before going to heaven after death. In order to receive heaven on earth, they must go through the law of love.

The more children you have in your family, the greater the cross you shoulder, and the more you must love God's Kingdom. Many children are sent to your family because your family has to carry many crosses, and such a family thus has many responsibilities to sacrifice more for the nation. Upon knowing this, you should fulfill your responsibility completely. A family living to such a standard will give birth to children who can inherit good fortune in the generations to come. (32-232, 1970.7.19)

How can we go to heaven? We can go to heaven by being passionately in love with God. We must love Him more than Adam and Eve did. We must love Jesus more than Peter, James and John did. Without that passionate commitment, the realm of the partner of true love, the realm in which God can love us, cannot be restored. Only when this is restored will all go well.

Don't worry about not having money

or children. If you continue on this path for ten or twenty years, you'll be able to scale the very high and steep mountains. You may feel that you are going through hardships in vain and gradually descending, but actually you are gradually ascending. The Unification Church expands by being struck. In a family of ten, the one who is opposed by the others, and endures, living for the sake of the public purpose, can become the head of that family. Such a person can become a lord in the heavenly nation. (142-289, 1986.3.13)

You must be able to embrace the children and grandchildren of all five races and their grandchildren. So, you must become the head of the family that loves the world's people as true parents with God's true love. By embracing the children and grandchildren of all races, you become a spiritual leader or true parents of a family that loves the world's people with God's true love. By standing in a position in which you can represent the family standard of true love, in a relationship with the original parents centered on God's love, can you enter heaven for the first time.

To enter heaven, we must be one with the true love of God and True Parents. Our destination is heaven, but only after we have lived on earth with the children born of that blood relationship. Until now, not one person has lived such a life and gone to heaven. Consequently, heaven is vacant. (176-209, 1988.5.9)

The way to heaven is opened by lov-

ing your siblings as God does. As you strive to follow my standard you should strive to bring your siblings with you. The conclusion is that it is your siblings who lead you to the highest, quickest and best way to heaven, not God or me (66-125, 1973.4.18)

Will you all head toward a global heaven or an individual one? You say a global heaven. I, too, am ambitious to grasp the line of love that leads to the global heaven. For forty years I have been going this way enduring persecution. I have been working in this manner in order to grasp the line of love transcending the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. With this in my grasp, where will I go? We must return to our hometown after finding the global love line. We must go there because we received many blessings and succeeded in life. Shouldn't we return and save the unfortunate people there? (143-139, 1986.3.17)

3.1.3. Actual results are needed

In the past, by praying and devoting themselves, people could meet the founder of a religion for that moment only, but then they had to separate because the founder had to ascend to the spirit world. Yet now the time has come when all spirit people can return to earth, centering on the realm of religion. With the advent of such an era, you cannot go to heaven without obtaining the actual results that will enable you to move the past, present and future. The

past was the era of angels and good spirits. The present is the era of the parents. The future is God's era. In conclusion, those who lack the actual result for mobilizing the spirit world, one's own parents as well as God, cannot enter heaven. This is the same way that the angels and God moved to help Adam and Eve. After that, Adam and Eve had to move the universe themselves.

Thus, only those who control the three worlds of past, present and future, centering on God, can enter heaven. Only then can they go to the original world, the Kingdom of Heaven. (161-199, 1987.2.3)

The condition enabling you to go to heaven is to love God more than your own children. You must love the Lord more than your own spouse. You must love the Holy Spirit more than yourself. That's the oneness of the Trinity. (10-99, 1960.7.17)

Then, who can enter and live in the heavenly nation? Sons and daughters who have brought joy to God can enter and live there. After that which we term the Fall took place, humanity has increased and multiplied through the millennia of history. From the midst of this humanity thus multiplied, none were born on earth who brought joy to God. (143-23, 1986.3.15)

You might hope to go to heaven by believing in the Unification Church. However, if you did not bring actual results on earth and you were allowed

into heaven, you would feel ashamed. We are not the group that seeks to go to heaven through a conceptual life of faith. We are the group that seeks to build the Kingdom of Heaven with all our heart and efforts. Those who seek to oppose and prevent that cannot be forgiven. In order to build the Kingdom, we must invest our entire mind and body as well as all our belongings and even our surroundings. We must take responsibility for the destiny not only of the nation, but also of even Asia. (22-226, 1969.5.2)

3.1.4. Altruism is needed

If you are fifty and have lived for the universe in accordance with heavenly ethics for over 25 years, you can go to heaven. In going to the next world, you can stay in the good spirit world. However, those who lived putting themselves first more often than not, you will be sad to hear, will go not to the original homeland of goodness, but rather to the land of evil and the world of egoism. Such a place is hell. You have to know these facts and from here forward liquidate your past life of selfishness. You should make efforts the rest of your life to live for the sake of the nation, world, universe and God. If you do this, without a doubt you will go forward into the ideal world of heaven and not into hell. (78-117, 1975.5.6)

I have experienced the reality of the spirit world more than anyone else. It is my field of specialization. What is the origin of order in the spirit world? Heav-

en is a world based on the principle of living for the sake of others. That is our original homeland.

We are destined to go to the spirit world whether we like it or not. This is our path of life. We are like wanderers moving ever closer toward that destination. Then what becomes the issue is whether we have lived more for others or ourselves. According to that distinction, those who lived predominantly for others will go to heaven. Those who lived the opposite way will go to hell.

You may not want to believe this fundamental formula in your present situation, but when you die you will come to understand.

God has set up religions and worked through them providentially to save humankind. The higher the level of these religions, the more their teachings should be in conformity with the purpose and principles of the original homeland. At such a level they can do nothing but recommend sacrifice and service.

In this way, there is no denying the fact that God has been working providentially behind history and religion. In light of these principles, we come to the conclusion that religions that serve other religions will prosper. However, those that seek to take a leadership position, and give rise to global problems by being self-centered, will decline. (74-51, 1974.11.27)

Heaven is a world of love, of living for God's sake, of existing for the sake of God, the central being. (98-33, 1978.4.8)

3.2. The lifestyle that enables us to go to heaven

3.2.1. Our position

God created people to participate in His love. Their path of life was to start in God's love, grow and mature in His love, form families and become perfected bodies of love. They would connect with the love of the world and in this way return to God's bosom of love.

Due to the Fall, this path was fundamentally destroyed. The relationship between God and humankind was severed. A gap between God and humankind was created such that no amount of human effort would allow the return to God. Similarly, no matter how much God tried to come to humankind, He could not. A wall and boundary were created and neither God nor humanity was able to surmount that wall. Humanity was not able to attend God as their parent.

This wall came in and remained between the individual's mind and body, and between husband and wife.

Such walls also arose in the family, tribe, people, nation, world, and between heaven and hell in the spirit world. Although God is on His glorious throne in heaven, we on earth cannot surmount the walls surrounding us without removing them.

This is the tragedy of people living on earth. How can we do away with it? Despite the fact that people are meant to live attending God as their Parent and be guided by Him in all aspects of their

lives, they either do not know He exists, or they declare that He definitely does not exist. They even say, “God is dead. We’ll have to sweep Him out of our world.” Such a tragic and historic situation is unfolding within the world in which we live. (135-267, 1985.12.15)

3.2.2. Instances of not being able to go to heaven

What should be our motivation: God’s will or ours? Our self should not become the motivation. Yet in many cases, people today often derive their motivation from the self rather than God’s will. Whereas God’s will calls us to go the way of suffering, the self seeks to run counter to it. These are conflicting positions. When God’s will tells us to go right, the self wants to go left. You try to justify yourselves by saying, “I had a harder time than anyone else since joining the Unification Church.”

Those who try to make excuses for themselves cannot enter heaven. The position of absolute faith is not a place where you can make excuses. There is not a word of excuse you can offer, but other people will come to you with their excuses. Even though you have done well, you cannot be proud of your achievements. What we can recognize as a hundred percent might be just one percent from God’s viewpoint. What we recognize as a hundred may be just one to Him. Thus, self-centered people cannot go to heaven.

From where does heaven begin? Heaven begins from the point of having

absolute faith. This means not being able to assert oneself. It is the place of absolute self-denial, without which absolute faith cannot emerge. In connection with life’s fundamental problems, most people today go about their daily routine. They wake up in the morning, go through life eating and say, “I am okay with God.” Many people believe that, but such people cannot own heaven. They cannot be okay with God. Without a relationship that can be officially recognized, you cannot even have an absolute standard of faith. Without having obtained this prerequisite standard, which must be surpassed in order to realize the Kingdom of Heaven, how can that Kingdom be achieved? There is not a chance. Why not? It is because Satan remains in that place. (46-79, 1971.7.25)

Historically, those called by God were usually over the age of fifty or sixty. They were a bunch of old hardened souls just a step from the grave and close to the day their dirges would be sung. In the background of His providence, God was working with these hardened and withered people at that time. But He also knew that in the future, He would work with people in their prime. He was concerned about how to develop the providence with them. Embracing such circumstances, God has walked the course of history.

Old age must pass into the prime of life, the prime of life into youth, youth into childhood, and childhood into infancy. In such a way, you must be born again. Otherwise you will not be

able to go to heaven. You must be able to receive affection like pure and innocent children. That is why Jesus said to Nicodemus, “You must be born again.” You must be born again, namely reborn. God carried out His work of redemption from the mother’s womb as the final dispensation. What an amazing situation it is! (20-94, 1968.4.28)

3.2.3. Our life for the sake of Kingdom of Heaven

If two-thirds of your life of seventy or eighty years were sorrowful, how would you handle that period? You should make it a joyful life centering on God. You should make it the Kingdom of Heaven where one gives and gives again. God also has to give. Parents must give to their children. Wanting to give and give again when you have something better to give is the heart of a parent. (34-141, 1970.8.30)

You are now fighting. You are firing guns all your life. Before meeting the world, your mind and body are fighting each other. How do you pacify them? Which side will be victorious, your mind or your body? You should be people who can say, “My mind will be victorious without a doubt.” Those whose minds are victorious are on the side of good. Those whose bodies are victorious are on the side of evil. Then, in the battlefield where the mind and body are fighting, what is the secret method for the mind to defeat the body? Or conversely, what is the method by which the body

defeats the mind? What is its strategy? This is the question. This determines the issue of whether mobilizing weapons and equipment through a certain direction is good or evil. That being the case, it is important to know what the key factor is for resolving this confrontation. What are the necessary conditions for people living in this evil world to establish goodness or evil? Knowing this we can add or remove some conditions. Once you find it out, this condition is simple. (36-61, 1970.11.15)

If there is a good-looking man and a good-looking woman, can the man, insisting upon his rights, say that he wants to receive God’s blessing alone? Can the woman, insisting upon her rights, say that she wants to receive God’s blessing alone? We must think of God’s will as absolute and go through all the conditions necessary for the hope of humankind. It is not given unconditionally. The thing that we must do in God’s Kingdom on earth in the future is to find the way for couples to be welcomed and respected worldwide. This is the way to live in God’s Kingdom on earth. (162-67, 1987.3.2)

A person cannot go on holding onto goodness. The resolution of the matter concerning good and evil is thus: the world gets occupied either by good or by evil. When good occupies the world, we live, but when evil occupies the world, we cease to exist. In this way, the world is running along the path of life and death. The individual, family, nation and world are the product of history. Out of them

all, how many are the products of goodness? In the individual, what relative importance do the products of goodness have? What percentage do they have in your living environment or in your personality? That is the issue. Does the world have more elements that lead to evil or to good? In that regard, we see we are surrounded by evil elements.

We do not need education for going the way of evil. Anyone can go that way because history started from evil. Would there be a need for education to go that way? Because people became evil of their own accord, society educates them to act according to their standard of conscience centering on ethics and morality. Education is carried out centering on what? Although people are educated according to goodness and conscience, how many are well grounded on the standard of that education? Evil things can be done without education; everybody can get a perfect score in that.

To those of us living in such circumstances, our conscience is always telling us to be good people. Although your mind always stimulates and advises you to be good, did you actually become good people? When we think about this problem, our whole life is continual lamentation. Today, tomorrow, this year all are lamentation. Youth, middle age, old age all are lamentation. We end our lives with it. In other words, our whole life may be marked by evil. This is the inevitable conclusion we reach. Because people were born from evil, they are wriggling in and going toward evil. This has been the way for the lives of those who

are living today and all those who have lived until now.

What does the Unification Church do these days? Does it teach people to be evil? If so, then it is not needed. Evil does not need to be taught. People go that way quite well even without being taught. (36-56, 1970.11.15)

3.2.4. The Kingdom of Heaven and us

In the face of death, Jesus cried out, “My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from me. Yet not as I will, but as You will.” Even as he died, he did not protest to God, but was ready to offer a greater sacrifice without question because his will was great for the sake of God’s will. Jesus’ attitude brought him to a closer position to God because it enabled him to go deeper. In front of such a person, God is melted. Whoever would strike such a person would be instantly destroyed. God would personally punish that person. Hence it is said, “Do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing.”

Those who lend money and remember doing so by adding interest cannot become owners in the Kingdom of Heaven. We must forget about the money we lend.

Do parents who raise children remember how much they spend on them and ask for interest? Giving and forgetting is the heart of a parent. Parental love is also more than that. Parental love also includes being heartbroken about being unable to give something better. As that

love continues eternally, people without parents are called orphans, and no one would wish to be one. (36-84, 1970.11.15)

Do you know what kind of place the spirit world or heaven is? It is the world to which altruistic people go. Egoists can never go there. They go to hell. Even famous ministers do and they will know where they are once they get there. Our Unification Church tries to save our enemies, even the communists. Yet the communists want to cut off the heads of the Unification Church members. That is the difference. So, what kind of thought should sway the world? We must be stronger than the communists. We must not grow strong by becoming evil people. If our strength is based on love through living for the sake of others, it will be enough to save the world.

We are not people who are living in heaven, but rather are seeking to go to heaven. How long will such a life continue? Will it end today or last a decade or a century? What would you do if you died while doing that? Hence, you must be engrafted. Cutting off and engrafting must be carried out. (91-173, 1977.2.6)

To what kind of world will we go ultimately? Hell or heaven? On the way there, are you going to be people who say, "Father, please help me!" or will you say, "Welcome, True Father!" That will be a matter of life and death. You say that you will live happily after marrying, but when I tell you to live well, I mean you should become unchanging couples. To do that, you must go to the

changing world and train together, and not get separated. Do not get separated even if you go to a world where people are divided between north and south or in all four directions. We must maintain ourselves in such a state of training. (129-181, 1983.10.30)

3.3. The four-position foundation and heaven

3.3.1. Families enter heaven

If I had worked for only the family until now, why would I have been persecuted? I am confident that if my father, mother, clan and all my remote relatives were gathered in one place, I could inspire them all through my words. I am supremely confident of bringing them all to God's will. However, I could not do that because it was not God's will. Jesus was driven away by his own relatives because he could not do it either.

However, you have passed all this and welcomed the circumstances of this era in which you can witness to your relatives. You may hold on to your parents and express your sincere heart to them, even shedding tears. In that sense, you are in a better situation than I. If your parents or relatives are unwilling to accept God's will, now is the time for you to move their hearts through tearful pleas or any other means. The time when you can freely witness is here. Although you may have a difficult time dealing with your elder brother, you can at least witness to your younger siblings, even if you have to do so forcibly to make them

believe. Although you have ushered in such a time, if you do not fulfill your responsibilities, you cannot face God. Henceforth, I, too, cannot deal with such people.

Those who do not do this cannot go to heaven. You go there only by forming your family. (21-65, 1968.9.1)

In the Unification Church, we never think that you can receive salvation as an individual. We do not go to heaven as individuals. Nobody can go alone. That's the rule. From the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve were to go to heaven together. Were the husband and the wife to go there alone? Couples and families not united cannot go there. That being the ideal, what kind of heaven would it be, if the father went to hell and the mother to heaven? We must go to heaven as couples, families, clans, and entire nations. (50-61, 1971.10.30)

From where does the Kingdom of Heaven start? It starts from the point where you deny even the basic desires of the heart with which you were born. For this reason those who go the way of truth lead celibate lives. But there are difficult problems leading a celibate life. These problems must be faced individually until the returning Lord comes to solve them.

Because there is no way forward giving primary consideration to individual salvation, we must save the family in order to save humankind. The returning Lord is coming to earth again to open the way for redemption of entire fami-

lies. Today, Christians say they will go to heaven through their belief in Jesus. However, they are all indulging in individualism. Originally, heaven was not supposed to be entered alone. If Adam and Eve had remained in the realm of God's love without falling, do you think they would have gone to heaven? If they had, hell could not have existed. Heaven is the place to which husbands and wives go, leading their children. It is the place to go, leading one's children, grandchildren and kindred. Further, it is the destination of the entire nation. Hence, it becomes the heavenly nation. Heaven is the place that is to be realized in this way. (41-299, 1971.2.17)

How stifled would God feel if you sat there alone stating, "Here is the Kingdom of Heaven"? Can you really say you like the way things are? How stifled He must feel when God looks at humankind or the religious world! (96-68, 1977.12.18)

What standard must we Unificationists reach? We must become people greater than Buddha, Confucius, and even Jesus. Until now, the purpose of religion was individual salvation.

The purpose of the Unification Church is geared toward the salvation of the family rather than just of the individual. This is the difference between the Unification Church and other religions. For salvation, we are saving the family, and in going to heaven we are going as a family.

The Unification Church's view of salvation is not of a husband going to heav-

en while his wife goes to hell. It is for both of them to go to heaven together. You do not let your parents get sent to hell. Instead, you bring them to heaven along with your children.

The Unification Church has a different dimension or idea different than any other religion. It teaches the way to go to heaven bringing our entire beloved families and tribes. Hence, the religions that have existed until now emphasize celibacy. But the Unification Church places importance on the family. We go the family-centered way. Those families live for God and the world. This is the way for Unification Church members to go.

(34-358, 1970.9.20)

Who can be the object of happiness in your family? For the husband, it is the wife. For the wife, it is the husband. For the parents, it is the children. For the children, it is their parents. From this basis, it is possible to build the Kingdom of Heaven.

Jesus said that the Kingdom of Heaven was within us. But imagine how lonely and miserable he must have been, when he could not say that the Kingdom of Heaven was in our families. You sing of happiness because you have families. For us, there is at least a moment in which we can do this. However, Jesus, the master of truth seekers, God's only begotten Son, who was to save the universe, could not even dream of the base for the external Kingdom of Heaven. He wandered around saying that the Kingdom of Heaven was within us, and for this he was crucified. He sought for

nearly three years to revive this in our hearts. How utterly lonely and miserable His life was!

If the kingdom that Jesus desired was only that of the heart, it would be eternally impossible to realize the substantial Kingdom beyond that. It would also be eternally impossible to realize the kingdom transcending the family through the society to the nation. When will the global Kingdom of Heaven and God's Kingdom in heaven be realized? The Messiah had the responsibility to save humankind, and to liberate the spirit world and God. When you think about his situation, how frustrated he must have been! For Jesus, being crucified was nothing. If he had collapsed, he could not face God. If he were to stand as a failure in the ideal of the Kingdom of Heaven and the ideal society, if it existed, he would have wanted to go and seek a wrapping cloth with which he could cover his face and hide. Who can understand the remorse that would fill Jesus' heart, remorse which he could not remove even if he were to die a hundred times? (120-47, 1982.10.3)

One cannot go alone to the place called Heaven. It can be entered only after one has realized the ideal of reciprocity. Fallen people must go through the providence of restoration, resurrection and re-creation to enter Heaven. Giving you the Blessing is to open wide the gates of Heaven. The Blessing means that I am opening the gates of Heaven, which were closed. Families enter by those gates. I am saying that you must

enter with your sons and daughters. The family must become historic fruit as a result of accumulated merit. God's providence of restoration history of six millennia went through the eras of the first Adam, the second Adam and the third Adam, in the family. So you must have three sons and find spouses for each of them. Thus, you can enter as a family. (152-239, 1963.5.25)

3.3.2. Jesus and his family

Christianity is the religion that taught about the family of love as the standard in which we can live together eternally centered on God. God wants to meet people to make a family. This is our desire. There is no other desire above this. (39-343, 1971.1.16)

Jesus strove to establish his family but could not fulfill that portion of God's will. He then went the path of the cross, putting behind him the thought of bride and bridegroom.

Hence, he said that he would come again and hold the Marriage of the Lamb. This refers to the appearance of the ideal family in which God can find rest. Then the Lord can attain the position of True Parent. As the True Parent, he has to give birth to true children and then form true brothers and sisters. Centered on this true family, by forming true clans and true races, he has to establish a new race and a new nation. We come to the conclusion that Jesus has to come again to realize this. (39-345, 1971.1.16)

3.3.3. The four-position foundation and the Kingdom of Heaven

Restoration means the restoration of the four-position foundation. To fulfill the four-position foundation the father, mother, and sons and daughters must be restored. Then, you must be completely restored as a Blessed Couples and give birth to children raising them so that they do not Fall. To do that, we must infuse a new tradition. To do so, we must be better than the saints. (58-33, 1972.6.6)

God's ideal for His Kingdom on earth can be established for the first time in the place where heaven is established on the family level. This must become a four-position foundation.

In the Unification Principle, the perfection of the ideal of creation is the perfection of the four position foundation. Why is that so? The four-position foundation is established when the world of vertical relationships and horizontal relationships are created through three stages centering on God, Adam and Eve.

The horizontal world can unfold only through Adam and Eve's sons and daughters. When this happens, the vertical world is naturally formed. Considering the body, the children are the horizontal basis of the body, and the spirit world is the horizontal basis of the mind.

As God is able to be present there for the first time, the Kingdom of Heaven is manifested on the earth. (96-28, 1978.1.1)

Section 4. Triumphant Entry through the Gates of Heaven

4.1. The door to people's hearts

Even someone like Buddha in a mystic state said, "In heaven and on earth, I alone am the honored one." People who have cultivated an integrated mind and enter the afterlife to stand as God's perfect object partner can say that of themselves. I feel that if I hold the world tight, it might melt in my fist. In such a state, miracles happen automatically. Healing is a natural concomitant of religious life. That is why we must cultivate the field of our heart in line with the door of our heart. To pioneer the standard of the direction of our heart, we must discover God, our subject. Yet He is obscure. If we want to connect to that obscure God, we must focus our mind. It is the only way to start to connect to God. If we illuminate our minds from within, we can surely find the direction in ourselves naturally.

Don't you all feel that? As you began praying, you were facing east, but when you enter the mystic state, your orientation changes. Such things happen, which is why we say the mind has a door. There are times we find it easy to pray, and times we that we do not. Despite all our absolutions and devotions, it is still difficult to pray. It also varies depending on the location of the room because North, South, East and West exist based on a central point. Further, it varies depending on the direction. Even in the mountains, there are places where you can pray

well. Also, there are places where satans gather. Those are the shady spots. Shady and sunny spots are spiritually formed in this way. If you experience this many times, you will understand.

When receiving intimations, dreams, revelations and visions, we must make efforts to apply them to our lives and not ignore them. They are the inevitable phenomena for pioneering and developing the relationship between God and humankind. (76-142, 1975.2.2)

For this purpose, you have all been making efforts seeking to open the doors of your hearts and cultivate the fields of your hearts within yourselves. It does not end when you have cultivated the fields of your hearts. You should then apply this to the relational world. (76-155, 1975.2.2)

4.2. The meaning of "Opening the Gate of Heaven"

4.2.1. The reason for "Opening the Gate of Heaven"

Why did the Day of the Opening of the Gate of Heaven come into being? Adam and Eve erred but God took full responsibility. By inheriting the responsibility from God, I have to open the gate. He must open the gates for individuals, families, and tribes as well. All those gates have been blocked. The gates for races, nations and the world have also been blocked. They must all be opened. I am seeking to open those blocked gates through Unification Church families.

God's strategy is to prepare small things for the sake of recovering bigger things. From the individual through the family, tribe, people, nation, world, and cosmos and even to the afterlife, they have been blocked by heaven and hell. Because of who are they blocked? Had Adam and Eve become true parents, this could have been one world, but because of the emergence of false parents through the Fall, heaven and hell have been blocked. Who should break down this historic wall of bitter grief? The True Parents of humankind. It's not something they are doing vested with kingship on a throne.

People are living in hell on earth, and spirits are suffering in hell in the spirit world. The gate of hell on earth and the gate of hell in the spirit world must be opened. Through these gates a pathway must be connected leading from the individual to the nation and world on earth. Then there must be a connection leading from the earth to the spirit world. It must connect to that single pathway that leads to the mainstream. Your mind and body must become one. With that level of oneness, there must be no barriers blocking your path as you pass through the family and tribe. From that level you transcend the race, nation and world to the spirit world. Everything must be broken down.

The final problem is opening the blocked spiritual gates of hell and heaven. It is impossible to enter heaven without opening the gates of hell on earth and in the spirit world. Only those who overcome hell can go to heaven. You must

overcome not prayer, but God's love. Otherwise, you cannot enter heaven. This is why I paved the way from earth to heaven by opening the gates of hell on earth and in the spirit world, centered on God's love. The name of the International Peace Highway came from this. This is to break down the wall, which has been blocking us. Jesus had the authority of the prince of heaven and God's only begotten son because he was able to love not only the satanic world, but also the spirit world.

Even the spirit world has been entirely blocked by walls. The Buddhist and Confucian realms are entirely blocked by walls. These must be taken down through a higher standard that comes from God's heart. From the high throne of heaven, work must progress downward having all the walls broken down. Starting with the walls of our ancestors of ten thousand years ago, a thousand years ago, several hundred years ago and those of the people who passed a few years ago, all must be broken down. Also the walls on earth must be removed as well, and a way to connect this to hell must be paved. Otherwise, the gates of heaven cannot be opened. (140-41, 1986.2.1)

4.2.2. The origin of the "Opening of the Gates of Heaven"

I greatly appreciate Mother. She had many very deep experiences of the heart during my time in Danbury. Being a mere child when she met me, she has had to lead a life that was to reach the line parallel to mine. Having lived that

way, her standard has gradually risen. Before, she probably did not experience the deep valleys of the heart. After being separated from me because of Danbury, she was able to realize the precious value of the True Father and understood how lonely it could be for a woman without her husband. As a result, on February 1, we conducted a ceremony to open the gates of heaven and hell. Now they cannot be closed. Through the True Parents standing at opposite poles, a solution can emerge from the place where the two poles connect. This was to connect the spiritual and physical worlds. On February 1, 1985 at 3 a.m. Eastern Standard Time, this standard was established at Danbury and East Garden.

With God's heart, you have to act so that the force of love can be connected. Are you going to become audacious leaders who will have to stand before God in need of salvation or are you going to go along this vertical line?

The way to the heavenly palace is the path on which man and woman travel as one. Where do they become one? They become one there and then must follow it. When ascending, you should ascend towards it. When descending, you should descend towards it. Everyone has to go this way of the sphere of the tribe, people, nation and world centering on the family in accordance with the principle of restoration through atonement. Everyone has to go through this path because they are in the realm of the Fall. (136-45, 1985.12.20)

All my life I have loved the enemy –

on the stages of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and world, and all the way to the cosmos. Why did I enter Danbury prison? It was because of the walls that had blocked the spiritual and physical worlds. In order to resolve what was disrupted due to the fallen parents, I had to pave a way in the spirit world and in hell.

On February 1, 1985 at 3 a.m., Mother and I established this condition through special prayer. Thenceforth, all the barriers of hell crumbled, so whoever makes effort on that foundation can rise up to the heavenly world. Also, if there are good spirits among your relatives in the spirit world, they will come to you, educate you and even take you with them to the heavenly world. Their role as the Savior in the spirit world has begun. The mission of the Savior lay not in the spirit world, but has been limited to the earth, yet now, by paving this way, the good spirits in the other world can educate the evil spirits in hell. While the good ancestors play the role of the Savior, a way has been opened allowing them to develop and ascend to the heavenly world. (136-183, 1985.12.22)

4.2.3. True Parents and the gates of Heaven

What is the mission of the Unification Church? It is different from past religions, which sought individual salvation. It is a religion that seeks an original ideal world as it would have been without the Fall. The original ideal world is where people perfect themselves in

heart, marry with God's love at the center of their relationship, give birth to children, and go to heaven.

What kind of heaven would it be if a father went to hell and a mother to heaven, or if the parents went to heaven and the children to hell? Heaven is the Kingdom everyone enters: parents, children, tribes, races and nations.

True Parents must emerge to open the gates of Heaven for humankind, who started from false parents. Even God cannot open the gates of heaven by Himself. If He could, being omnipotent, why didn't He? The Fall was due to human beings. The Fall is why they, as the perpetrators of sin, must receive punishment. Having lost the kingdom, they must recover it. It has taken six thousand years.

What must be done to open the gates of Heaven? God must take someone in the position of His servant, as His adopted son and give him the opportunity to relate to His legitimate son with absolute obedience. Here, the legitimate son is Adam before the Fall. The adopted son is the archangel prior to the Fall. Originally, an adopted son, in the position of a servant, cannot receive love directly like a legitimate son. (42-286, 1971.3.27)

Had there been no Fall, people who went to the spirit world would have been able to enter heaven by connecting with the core of God's love and True Parents' love. Instead, our journey to heaven has been deferred because throughout history, nobody had been able to attain that bond. People have become stranded in

hell and paradise, which is why heaven has been empty.

The people to enter heaven first must be the True Parents. If I were to say that heaven is empty, people would think I am demented, yet even Jesus could not enter heaven. One cannot go there alone. Our original ancestors should have grown through adolescence, established the ideal of love centered on God, become parents and bequeathed the seeds of true love. Then, the first place they entered would have been heaven. As yet, there have been no parents centered on God's love who were able to bequeath the seeds of true love and thus no foundation of leaving behind such descendants. Heaven, thus, is empty.

If we want to go to heaven, we must pass through and conquer hell. The conquerors of hell go to heaven. Having surmounted hell, they are on the roadside leading to heaven, and that place is paradise. (140-45, 1986.2.1)

Look at humankind as one man and one woman. If there are four billion people, you should think, "Half of humankind's four billion people are men and the other two billion people are women. That constitutes a man with two billion cells and a woman with two billion cells. With that mind, I will love those two people." You have to think that way. God is planting those four billion people to engage in the work of re-creating Adam and Eve.

That means that God chooses one representative man from among the two billion men and one representa-

tive woman from among the two billion women to be His first loves. These representatives will be seen as the fruit of the love of humanity. You should be resolved to loving that entity which is the fruit of the love of two billion people more than the father and mother who gave birth to you. Then you become someone who can love the four billion people more than your father and mother. At that point, you will have nothing to do with Satan because you will be totally one with the realm of God's love. You will then be in the position of loving humanity in oneness with God.

Those representatives are the True Father and True Mother. If you have the heart to love humankind more than the True Parents, everything will be okay. The gates of hell in the spirit world and on earth will be opened. Wherever such a person goes, it will be a highway. But then, you will have to pay for the gasoline.

In the original world, angels are to lead the way to heaven, not True Parents. It is not the Principle to have the True Parents lead you. They paved the way and you are destined to follow it if you love them. While following this path, in the position of loving the True Parents, and loving humankind more than the True Parents, everything will go well. No way would be blocked. There would be no alleys. We are going along the mainstream of heart, which directly connects to the highway. Thus, we can go directly from the earth to heaven.

With regard to this world, there are two kinds of people, men and women.

We are entering the realm of heart, the heart that loves the parents, which transcends the satanic world. If you have made bad conditions in front of True Parents, then you have to go that way again. Throughout my life, as a parent, I have taken responsibility to prepare the way for my children to go. If you stand in the place where you love humanity with the same heart as you love the True Parents, you will become one with the True Parents and stand in the same line horizontally with True Parents. If you do this, Satan cannot influence you, because the realm of fallen heart will be below you. You can connect to heaven directly. To commence this work, I declared the Day of the Opening of the Gate of Heaven. (140-56, 1986.2.1)

4.2.4. Our attitude to the "Opening of the Gate of Heaven"

On earth, True Parents have prepared the highway and brought the victorious power of heaven and passed it on to you. In that very place where you inherit that power, you must plant God's love in your mind and body and become one with True Parents. Then Satan cannot separate you from God.

What will happen to you? Together with me, you who represent the world have been restoring Cain's sons and daughters. If you too have the heart to love the world more than the True Parents, nothing evil can block your way to God's Kingdom, whether on earth or in heaven.

You start from the earth and then

can go beyond the world and the spirit world directly to heaven. Yet if you cannot do it, your way will pass through so many high and steep mountains. Knowing this, I dedicated my life up to now to prepare the way. Since I gave you the privilege today to attend the Day of the Opening of the Gate of Heaven, please, become the victors who can pass through safely and attain that realm of heart without fail. (140-61, 1986.2.1)

4.3. The path to heaven through fulfilling one's portion of responsibility.

Where are you now? You must know your location. You must know where you are. Satan and God are dividing you up between them based on the fulfillment of your portion of responsibility. They are saying, "This person is yours, that person is mine." People who do not fulfill their portion of responsibility will not belong to God. Satan will claim them as his.

While longing for God's love, ideal conjugal love and ideal filial love, fulfill your portion of responsibility. You cannot do that by saying, "I need money. I need this and that. I must educate my children."

As you seek to enter heaven, the gatekeeper will ask you whether you fulfilled your portion of responsibility. In the fallen world, there is no one who can ever go to heaven. Upon ushering in the era of the Second Coming, and, after going through the time of Adam and the time of Jesus, God has brought

forth this movement to break through the standard of the fulfillment of our portion of responsibility by raising the third Adam.

Now all religious believers seek to fulfill their portion of responsibility in order to go to heaven. Satan thinks he cannot give this portion of responsibility to humankind even if he has to burn all the religious people and offer them as a sacrifice. But God thinks that even if He were to sacrifice all the religious people, He would want to restore this portion of responsibility. (149-322, 1986.12.21)

4.4. Heaven and hell are our options

In our life of faith, we should not complain. There is nothing to complain about. You should be joyful. You should go joyfully even when shedding tears. You are to go laughing while shedding tears. If, after being taught this, you do not do it, what will happen? If you do not do it, there is no other way. God cannot help you, and I cannot help you.

Thus, you decide whether you go to heaven or hell. Rev. Moon doesn't decide, God doesn't decide, you yourselves decide. The decision is yours. If you complain, that is hell. If you go with gratitude even when you have something to complain about, that is heaven. (96-122, 1978.1.2)

Heaven is not somewhere you go through being taught. It is the automatic destination of conscientious people. When the sun rises, the buds of all the

trees turn to face it. If even the grass and trees can turn to face the sun, then how much more so can people as the Lords of creation not know the way to go? Such phenomena will take place. (75-41, 1975.1.1)

Section 5. Instructions Concerning Heaven and Hell

5.1. Formulating our view of heaven and hell

The mission of the Messiah is to restore tribes centered on his family. By fulfilling our mission as tribal messiahs we are formulating our views of heaven and hell. You have to clearly distinguish “There is heaven, here is hell.” Do not go toward hell and make others not go that way. If your tribe knows the way, many tribes around you, even villages will come to follow you. (217-84, 1991.4.16)

5.2. The importance of life in the spirit world and life on earth

Life in the spirit world and life on earth are not separate. Both are important. That means that our life in the spirit world is connected to our life on earth. They are both important, yet people who live on earth today do not understand the concept of eternal life. They think that only life on earth is important. That is the problem. Even many Unification Church members do not understand that how you live on earth is the foundation that guarantees your life in the spirit world.

Hence, you need to be constantly

aware of the importance of your life. You must live for the sake of your eternal life based on the formulation of your view of heaven understanding that eternal life begins from the present moment. If you do not understand this point, you will end up doing something else. Everything that you do now determines the value of your eternal life.

The physical and spirit worlds move facing each other. If the physical world ascends, so will the spirit world. If the physical world descends, the spirit world follows suit. If one turns, the other does likewise. So you have to realize this point during your life on earth and live in a way that adds to your eternal life. The spiritual and physical worlds are not separate. If you do not clearly distinguish between heaven and hell, you will not understand this. In this way, you must always work with the feeling that both eternal life and life on earth are important. No one can take care of your life except you. More than anyone else, you yourself know God. If you become like that, wherever you go heavenly fortune will embrace you. In that case, if you are gone from your village, people will search for you saying, “Where did that person go? I have not seen him for a few days. I miss his voice, as I am used to hearing him in the morning and evening.” You cannot stop it from happening. Because heavenly fortune is with him, someone who lives according to his conscience automatically orients himself to that direction, similar to iron filings moving towards a magnet, or like whatever has life moves with all its tac-

tile sense towards the light.

If I am not here, it will be a problem for the Japanese, Koreans and Americans. Why is that so? Because within

the concept of eternal life there must be order to bring unity. We can make this concept the standard for the earth and eternity. This is most important. (217-85,

CHAPTER FIVE

The Messiah and the Spirit World

Section 1. Jesus and the Spirit World

Jesus died bearing the cross during the course of performing the mission of John the Baptist. Thus he was unable to completely fulfill his mission as the son. From his death until now, he has been working to restore the archangel. After restoring the archangel, he must go the way of the son. In this way he has been seeking to go the way of the servant and that of the adopted child. Jesus could not fulfill his mission as the legitimate Son. He went the way of the archangel, the way of the servant and the way of the adopted son.

Consequently, even those who believe in Jesus Christ can only become adopted children. They are in the same position as Cain who is of a different lineage. A relationship that is not linked by blood remains in the archangel's position. Providential history until now has been that of a struggle to link the lineages.

Jesus did not die on the cross as the son. If he had been in the position of the son having spirit and body unity, becoming a victorious offering to God, there would be no need for him to come again. He could not offer his total self. He could offer only half of himself. He

lost his body and could offer only his spirit. This represents a level equivalent to the angelic realm in the spirit world.

Therefore, Christians cannot enter Heaven but go instead to a spiritual realm lower than paradise and wait there. That spiritual realm is under the dominion of the archangel.

In order to secure a victorious realm in the spirit world, that victorious realm must first be established on earth. This was the purpose of Jesus' coming and this is why Christianity must restore and establish the victorious realms in both the spirit world and on earth and inherit the realm of the archangel. That is the mission of Christianity. Because there has been no substantial perfection in Christianity, only spiritual perfection, Christianity emerged placing prime importance on the spirit world.

The returning Lord must have the authority to subjugate the archangelic realm in the spirit world. If he does not, he can not begin his mission on earth. He must come in the position to inherit all the spiritual realms under Jesus, who attained victory in the spirit world, in the same way that Jesus inherited the accomplishments of John the Baptist. Although John the Baptist had spiritually bequeathed everything to Jesus,

John did not carry out his promise and these realms became separated. Consequently, Christianity was established to rebuild that. (47-157, 1971.8.28)

It was unjust enough that Jesus died on the cross on earth, but after his death he had to descend to hell for three days. That was a test.

Death holds the greatest dread for humankind, but going to hell held the greatest dread for Jesus. Then did he become the master of dread or the master of happiness in hell? He went to hell and for three days had to undergo the ordeal of overcoming suffering. (34-143, 1970.8.30)

Since God is fair, the Messiah will come to humankind with an ideology of equality. The Messiah is the savior who comes to save all of fallen humankind. Therefore, he deals fairly with everybody. He comes with a fair purpose and creates a fair environment for the age. Whoever unites with him can be his disciple.

The Messiah goes from the bottom of hell to the top of the most glorious place in the world of humankind. This means that there is no place that he would not go, even at the risk of his life, to save humankind.

Viewed from this principle, it is illogical to say that the Messiah will come on the clouds, from the sky. It is a mistaken view. People who believe that really do not know anything about the spirit world. Go to the spirit world and see for yourself whether what I say is true. You

will know once you die. The Messiah operates according to such a formula.

Why do people in the spirit world seek to make contact with the earth? Why is that so? Until now no one really understood. Without resolving the issues on earth, the path to perfection cannot be attained. Whether you are rich or poor, the same rule applies.

Together with the Messiah we have to open the spirit world and to do that we have to establish corresponding relationships on earth. The Messiah does this by going through the stages of the individual, family, tribe and world. These stages are to be connected to the spirit world.

The victorious foundations of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world must be established on earth. To do this, the entire spirit world must be mobilized to come down to earth. To find the center of all this, the Messiah has to come to this world and undergo hardships along his way. While doing so, he must restore the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world in the correct order.

That is why people are seeking and moving toward one goal and one world now. (91-278, 1977.2.27)

Section 2. The Returning Lord and the Spirit World

The returning Lord must come as the ancestor of not only the third but also the first and second Israels. Unification Church members must, from a position similar to that of the first Israel at

the time of Jesus, overcome their doubt. Then, with a Father's heart, they should occupy the position of a child inside the Father.

The returning Lord must establish order in the spirit world. By doing this, he must begin his work on the foundation where the first Israel was established. Since people in the spirit world cannot form a bond with the True Parents, they must go through this course.

The archetypes of the twelve tribes already exist in the spirit world, but Christianity, which had to become the second Israel, lost the center by which it could organize itself into tribes. Thus, the returning Lord must proclaim the ideology of unification and organize his tribes. (10-217, 1960.10.14)

Since God is formless, you will not see Him even when you go to the spirit world. That being so, God, as the Father, must acquire a body. In that way, the incorporeal and corporeal become one. This symbolizes the universe becoming one.

God created Adam and Eve for the purpose of assuming a body, but this is possible only through love. There must be love in order for God to have a body that resembles His image.

When Adam and Eve become God's body He will dwell in their minds and rule the physical and incorporeal worlds through them. His kingdom will then be created. It is a kingdom of love. The spirit and body are to unite only through love, not through anything else. (143-93, 1986.3.16)

Section 3. True Parents and the Spirit World

3.1. The difference between your natural parents and True Parents

Your natural parents and True Parents have different concepts of love. Your natural parents teach you love centered on your physical body, and True Parents teach you true love centered on the spirit world.

It seems that natural parents should suffice, so why are True Parents needed? Because the Fall occurred. Fallen parents have been teaching their children to be inattentive to the important things, and in so doing have held them down, allowing them to remain self-centered. Thus, parental love has drawn a decisive line holding you eternally within the satanic world, and there is no way to sever it.

Then what are True Parents? The higher you rise on such a foundation, the greater the things they teach you, so that you can be synchronized with the rhythm of the heavenly nation – the eternal nation – and so that you will have no problem breathing when you go there.

When people educated by their natural parents go to the spirit world, they will all have to go into some corner and stay there, as if to shelter them from the wind. If they turn around, they will only see people who deny themselves and who want to live for others. That sight would be too much for them and they would feel as if they were going to suffocate.

Who made it this way? Satan. That is why people are hoping for true parents

to come and liberate them. To liberate them, you cannot just resolve the situation just like that; you have to do so by going the opposite way. (129-99, 1983.10.1)

If you want to return to God, you have to be ready to train for the spirit world, which is a four-dimensional world. The training center for loving and becoming one with the spirit world is where you love God and True Parents. The Messiah comes for the purpose of fulfilling the role of True Parents on earth to connect the spirit world and the physical world to God. That is all there is to his mission. He truly loves us and lives for our sake to a greater extent than anyone else.

Before the Messiah – in other words, the True Parents – comes on the earth, the entire spirit world is completely divided, similar to this divided world. The True Parents in corporeal form must tear down the many walls that have been built up. Only then will the two worlds be connected. In that connection, the True Parents not only represent the physical world but also the spirit world.

By attending the True Parents and by means of absolute love, for the first time you are able to pave a road that connects to the spirit world. By demonstrating absolute loyalty before the messiah, you establish the precondition of having demonstrated absolute loyalty before even the greatest of all spirit people. You establish the condition of having demonstrated absolute loyalty to God's commands. You have to demonstrate absolute loyalty to the True Parents in the place of God. Why is that? It is so that

you can establish a tradition that enables you to become one with the citizens of heaven.

Why do you need to attend the True Parents? Because they represent the spirit world and God. It is so that you can form a bond of heart with the True Parents and be qualified to participate in the realm of the victory of heart that True Parents sealed with love. (105-112, 1979.9.30)

3.2. True Parents are the axis

Where are there true parents? Where are there true siblings? Where are there true families? Where are there true societies? Where are there true nations? Where is there a true world? If these do not exist, you only go from one unhappiness to another in your life. That is not how life should have been originally. That is why we spend our lives in this world struggling and gasping for air in search of the truth. Until now people applied religion and philosophy in their search to find truth, but they could not succeed. This cannot be resolved through human efforts. (159-282, 1968.5.19)

We must unite the world together with the True Parents. Through the heart of God, the axis of the spirit world and the axis of the earth have to be united with the True Parents. You cannot take True Parents out of the center of the spirit world or the earth.

When evil parents came into being a confrontation occurred on the horizontal plane that led to humanity being split

in two. On the vertical plane, it brought about the division of the separate worlds of the God of goodness and a god of evil. Because all this was caused by the emergence of false parents, the True Parents have to come at the point that leads to the give and take of these two worlds. The Fall occurred because of false parents. To deal with this, True Parents have to come into being. That which is true has to appear. (149-279, 1986.12.7)

3.3. True Parents is the center

The democratic world represents the right wing whereas the communist world represents the left wing. They are now breaking down. The same can also be said of the United States. Neither world has a center. What is needed at this time is head-wing thought and Godism. No form of humanism can stand before God. God alone is the absolute and eternal center. Only head-wing thought can become the center of all humankind.

The true center for the spiritual and physical worlds can only be the ideology centered on true parents. From the perspective of true love, head-wing thought and Godism are the same concept. (205-261, 1990.9.9)

Is there a limit to the need for the True Parents? There is none. Whether in this world or in the spirit world, this need is infinite. On the other hand, where is the limitation of the President of the United States? In four to eight years, he topples over and drops out, but the True Parents do not. The limitation is different. In

four to eight years, the American president has to pack his bags, but that is not the case with the True Parents.

The True Parents are needed not just in this earthly world but also in the spirit world. Why? A palace was supposed to be built in the spirit world by people who lived on earth with love, but there were no such people. Even God and the people in the spirit world cannot build the palace of love. The True Parents must build it.

The palace of love in the spirit world begins from the True Parents. Even if there were already a palace in the spirit world, the entire spirit world could only settle with that place at the center if the True Parents entered and declared: "This is where we will have a palace." The spirit world absolutely needs me because this responsibility has yet to be fulfilled. (205-255, 1990.9.9)

3.4. The strength of the bond with True Parents

The True Parents are the true parents whom all humankind must seek. Their existence makes it possible for true goodness to be established. So what kind of people are they? They are the foothold enabling you to move with God. They stand as an altar that bridges the gap between God and humankind. They are like the bridge by which we cross over the world of death. They are the position where you can be with God, the focal point enabling you to bond together with God as Parent and child, and become one body with Him. It is the

point of origin where two boundaries that became separated from each other can converge, and where humankind can become one with God for the first time since being separated from Him as a result of the Fall. The True Parents are the ones who stand in the position of the indemnity sacrifice.

If there were a place where we could go and call on God in times of desperation and have Him forget all that has happened during the past millennium and come forward so that we could form a relationship with Him, such a place would be so valuable to us that we would not exchange it for anything in the world.

God sent the True Parents so that humankind, which is not qualified to be in His company or to form a bond with Him, can do so in relaxed surroundings. How then are we to give thanks for this grace by which the bond of the True Parents has been given to us unconditionally? How much did you thank God? In response to the grace by which you are now able to receive salvation, how much have you thought about how you have been given the opportunity to be jubilant and take a vow of victory? How much have you realized that you are making a new start with unlimited hope and eternal values? This is the question.

How much must God have been longing for the True Parents, whom He knew could realize His historical desire to find His sons and daughters! Consider two standards of longing: God's longing for the True Parents, and your longing, you who are in the world of death and long to be saved from it. You would normal-

ly place greater importance on the True Parents than you would God, esteem them as more precious, and value them more than you would God. Until now, though, this has not been the case.

How much must God have been looking forward to that occasion when humankind can be with True Parents, establish a bond with them, and stand face-to-face with them! Each of you must be able to say: "I will achieve such a position and I will lay the foundation for such a victory." The important thing is how strongly you are determined to overcome any difficulty, however great; that you will view this position as a turning point that determines all the values in your life, and that you will make this bond your primary motivating force. Viewed from this perspective, we need to recognize how fraudulent we have been. We must realize how much we have failed to establish our own positions as we wandered as aimlessly as the wind.

Are we people with whom God can live? No. We need a savior. What kind of person is this savior? He is the one who substantiates the bond with True Parents. From this perspective, how extraordinary the bond with True Parents is! Thanks to True Parents, I am able to begin a true life, and undertake a relationship of new life. Through this relationship of life, you are able to initiate new families, new societies, new nations and a new world. Also, you must realize that through that relationship, you can obtain the essential factors for the victory to resolve all the paths of life and

death of the past two millennia.

There is no self there. God is not the one who must walk the way of suffering in order to save the fallen world. He does not have to deal with the fallen world. He comes forward with a new bond of true love. He comes to us with new hope and a new foundation for restoration. These are the circumstances in which the bond between God and you is formed. It is a bond by which the four directions can be brought into oneness, and it is linked at one point of origin so that it can destroy the world of death and establish the foundation for a new heaven and earth in the bright future. In this way, the world can make a new start by practicing the parent-child relationship.

No sword or power can break the bond between you and the True Parents – not even the power of Satan. Why? Because this bond possesses the special authority to break through all of today's problems and bring salvation to humankind, and because the power that humankind has historically desired has been concentrated in this bond, or stronghold. Thus, no historical concentration of power would be strong enough to break this relationship. In this way, the True Parents are the ones whom God has sent forth as historical sacrifices for the purpose of doing away with all evil and making a new victorious beginning based on a new bond.

In the same way that God is in a serious position and miserable circumstances, we should be also. The Father's circumstances should be felt as our own. Unless someone appears on this earth

to fulfill the duty of a child and comfort God, there will never be a way to resolve historical problems.

Even if we were to find ourselves in extremely difficult circumstances, we should not stand before God hoping to receive His sympathy, but rather we should stand in a position to sympathize with Him. Jesus was the crystallization of all the elements that were carefully accumulated throughout history in the context of such a bond. Yet, because Jesus could not realize God's will, the returning Lord must continue it and go that way. The True Parents are the concentration of all historic hopes. God has sent them to represent the whole as the condition for the restructuring of history.

You bond with the True Parents not from the spirit world, but from the earth. Since the True Parents come to the earth in corporeal form, they can answer when you call on them and sympathize with you when you are in difficulty. You cannot imagine how blessed you are that you can meet True Parents on the same horizontal plane.

Until now, God has worked to overcome all the difficulties that might be faced in order to achieve a decisive victory. Here, the question is whether you have become the princes of victory. You must be able to say that you have become one with that heart and are completely inseparable from it. In other words, the pivotal axis of your life has to be the conviction that you are with God and that you are together with the True Parents. Only if each of you becomes the self that can continue on the same course for a

thousand years, ten thousand years even, will a linkage be established between God's Kingdom on earth and His kingdom in the spirit world. This means that you will be the masters of heaven and the masters of earth, and then God's Kingdom on earth and in the spirit world will be opened up for the first time.

Such a bond is not something formed in a position of comfort. It is formed in a position of extreme difficulty, a position so serious that it could not possibly be any more serious, a position where life and death are on the line, a position where there is an increased level of risk.

That is why the Bible says, "Whoever would save his life will lose it; and whoever loses his life for my sake will find it." Jesus' expression may sound archaic, but this is the normal approach and attitude for going the way of restoration and for progressing through the world of heart. It is clear that each person must strive to achieve such a state, and that path will become the true course. (31-73, 1970.4.19)

Many of you here have passed your forties and are in your fifties. If you were asked what you had accomplished up until now, what would be your answer? Perhaps you will die within the next ten or twenty years. Imagine the moment when you come face-to-face with death and look back on the course you have taken after you came to know God's will. Then think about how God could not claim His rightful place and remove the servant-like mask of unsatisfied desire from His face because of your failure to complete your responsibility to restore

human beings, who remain the devil's descendants. Will you be able to keep from bowing your head in shame after you enter the spirit world? How will you go there and walk around with your head held high? How will you live there? You will just have to go hide somewhere. Everything about you will be revealed for everyone to see.

You cannot avoid going to the spirit world. We are all destined to go there. What are you going to take with you? Let us look at the example of a daughter in a poor family. Her pitiable appearance would make it difficult to present herself to her relatives. Worse, without taking a dowry with her, how could she face marrying the son of a rich family with more than a hundred clansmen in a home shared by layer upon layer of people from four generations? How could she withstand the ridicule if she were to go empty-handed? Her in-laws would proudly tell her, "According to our family tradition, so-and-so did this, grandmother and all the other women did this, and big sister did it this way, and so did everyone else." If she is seen as a failure in the family, how could she hold her head up in front of them or sit down to eat? How could she even pick up her spoon or chopsticks?

It is terrible to be unable to fit in to a group. What will you take with you? If you were asked, "If you have been a Unification Church member for forty years, then what have you brought with you?" how would you respond? Is the spirit world where you are going to a place where you are worse off or better off than

here? Is the place where you are going after you die worse than here or better? It is a place that is tens of millions of times better than here. It is a world where you can accurately measure everything.

It is a place where each individual feels the pain of knowing exactly where he is situated. If you want to raise yourself up one stage, it will take you a thousand, even ten thousand years.

Because you received the precious thing called the Blessing, the door is open for you, but you cannot enter because you are not dressed in formal attire. You must go to the banquet house in formal attire. Can a groomsman go to a wedding in work clothes? Think about it. You have to dress appropriately for the occasion in order to go there and be welcomed into that environment. Otherwise you will be thrown out. People will say to you, "Get lost, blockhead!"

There was once a rich man in Mokpo who was said to be so rich that he owned all the land in the northern part of the city. Then, my friend married this man's only daughter and became his son-in-law. Since this was during the Japanese occupation, almost no one could afford the expense of a modern Western-style wedding with tuxedos and gowns and such. Usually, a groom would just wear his civil defense uniform and stick a single flower into his lapel.

However, because this man was rich and had all his rich friends coming, he decided to have a modern-style wedding. I was asked to be one of four groomsmen. When the bride's family prepared the outfits for the groomsmen,

they decided to make all of them match the height of the groom. The groom was about the same height as I was, but he was not nearly as heavy. So when I put on the white shirt they had bought for me and buttoned it up, you could see my belly button. Wearing this tight shirt, I had to maintain a posture that put a lot of pressure on my spine. After a couple hours of this, I started to get muscle cramps. What was I supposed to do? Could I cry out in a loud voice? I remember going over to a wall and bending over like this to massage the cramped muscles.

Dressed like this, I had to stand in front of this huge crowd of thousands of people, including everyone who was anybody in South Jeolla Province. I would much rather have found a rat hole somewhere that I could crawl into. It was all I could do to stay there in my place and endure.

Being unable to fit into a particular environment is oppressive.

I know the spirit world well. I know all the saints and all the founders of religions who are in any way significant. They do not want to yield to you, but you must not be shut out from that group.

(212-224, 1991.1.6)

Section 4. Rev. Moon and the Spirit World

4.1. Rev. Moon's establishment of spiritual conditions and its foundation

It is a principle that a perfect minus automatically gives rise to a perfect plus,

and that a perfect plus automatically creates a perfect minus. That is a principle of the creation of the universe and a law of existence. Thus, if you perform a perfect motion on the earth according to this principle, then the spirit world will become connected. This has happened for the first time in history. As such, whatever is a problem in the spirit world becomes a problem on earth, and if it is solved on earth, then it will also be solved in the spirit world.

Each time this happens, restitution must be paid. I have borne the responsibility alone on the way of restoration to resolve all the problems in history and the universe, and in the spirit world and on earth. I know when restitution must be paid, and I clearly know what happens in the spirit world and what happens on earth when this breaks down.

The Bible states that what is loosed on earth will also be loosed in heaven. To loose something on earth restitution must be paid. Yet you do not know the way of restoration. We must pass through the ages of subject-object atonement on the individual level, the family level, the tribal level, and through the ages of subject-object atonement on the level of a people and nation, and then enter the age of subject-object atonement in the global realm. You do not know this, but I do, which is why my words are reflected directly and revealed in the spirit world. (131-226, 1984.5.4)

The Kingdom of Heaven is realized in the most miserable place on earth. Where is that? In the bottom-most pris-

on of prisons. Rev. Moon of the Unification Church has laid the foundation in the spirit world and on earth. I began from the bottom of hell, the most miserable prison among prisons, and worked with the spirit world to lay this foundation. In the course of widening this foundation, I faced much opposition. I have been opposed by my family, my tribe, my people and my nation, by the United States and other nations, by Asia and the entire world.

Since I had to open the way for all humankind, I even befriended condemned criminals. I was chained together with thieves, ate with them and comforted them. Recently, I even went to Las Vegas to pray for those imprisoned there. I bought the New Yorker Hotel to clear away the worst dens of Satan in New York and lay a new foundation. I had to go there to mingle with them and comfort them. Only in this way could I open and pave the way for people from all walks of life, even those headed for destruction in the satanic world. By my paving the way on earth, barriers in the spirit world will be opened and the world can be unified. Hence, I will marry blacks and whites interracialy, and buy houses for them. In this way, I am doing things that have never been done before in this world. (91-160, 1977.2.6)

I have triumphed in the spirit world. Who can do this? Numerous spiritual masters in the world will have to come to me in the future and learn from me. Doubtless this will happen. Thus, it is not a problem if the Korean people or all

people in the world oppose me. All the multitudes of people in the spirit world do what I tell them. (13-49, 1963.10.16)

4.2. Special authority in relation to the spirit world

Most new developments in the civilized age are connected to patent rights. Yet they are all different. There are patents for making clothes. Everything is patented. If you own a patent, then you can assert your ownership of it anywhere you go. That is the way it is in the world. There is such a law in the spirit world. There is no law stating that only white people can register patents nor is there any law that prohibits black people or Asians from doing so. This holds true anywhere.

There were many founders of religions and other religious people in history who labored to gain a patent for going to the Kingdom of Heaven, but who among them holds the patent? How will you recognize the person with the patent for going to the spirit world? Since the motley group that is gathered here is saying in unison that they will climb up to any heights and that is good enough! Then what about God? Can He tell me that I cannot do that? He may say, "Without Rev. Moon's signature, it is no good." Even the great president of the United States, or any king, or any saint, or any founder of a religion, will have to come and bow down to me when they need my signature.

To obtain a doctorate, you must even wash your thesis professor's bottom and

thank him even if he kicks you, in order to get his signature. If you do not, he may not sign. You might want to say, "I am much better looking. I have a nicer nose, face, stature and everything else. If we were to wrestle, I would win. I can eat more than he can. I can beat him in any competition. I am better than him in tens, even hundreds of ways. Yet he thinks that he can withhold a doctorate from me just because I do not know that one thing." None of this, though, will do you any good. I might have such special authority in relation to the spirit world.

When I went to prison there were many weird rumors, and people thought that I would be ruined and completely disappear. Now, I am still alive and speaking boldly. I have an antenna that allows me to see, hear, and know everything; therefore I can confidently speak out with a loud voice.

Even God would like to see my endorsement before giving His approval. He will look to see if my signature is there, and if it is, He will say, "Okay," and if not, He will say, "No." It is easy to say this, but can you realize how difficult it was to make this possible? If I actually have such a patent, then the conclusion is that, in the future, the entire spirit world will move within my hands, and the physical world's path will narrow until they have no choice but to follow. (134-17, 1985.1.1)

The world of nature is filled with the truth. You all may know little about the spirit world, but I am an expert on it. Not only in the twenty-first century, but also

in the twenty-second and even the thirtieth century, the spirit world will not be able to open its gates without me. My reputation will live on for eternity as the original person who logically explained about the spirit world and revealed the systematic details about opening the gates of heaven. Even spiritualists who consider themselves the best in the world will have to come and learn from me. That is why I became the founder of the Unification Church. I will unify world Christianity. If they had listened to me, they would have already been unified. (203-324, 1990.6.28)

Once I make a declaration from the position of Abel after restoring the birth-right of the firstborn, the spirit world will stop misusing the physical world. It will come to serve the physical world. Do you think that it would listen if it were told, without any reason, to cooperate with and obey the physical world? If you told it to do something without any explanation, do you think it would be done? You have to make it possible by explaining that this works in this way and that works in that way. Then, would not north and south be united, east and west be united, and everything be brought into proper order? (210-181, 1990.12.19)

4.3. The unification of the spirit world and the unification of the physical world

Unless the spirit world is united, the physical world cannot be united. If there is a Lord who has unified the spirit world,

what would be the problem in unifying the physical world? It is not difficult.

From now on we have to manage even spiritualists. I am now their commander. They too must come here to learn from me. They only know a one-way direction. For that reason, even if they receive messages from the spirit world, they should not regard them as absolute. If they do not interpret their messages according to the Divine Principle and select the right direction, they will easily become satans.

The spirit world is testifying to and following me now. Since I have a specialist's detailed knowledge of the spirit world, I have been able to guide you this far up until now while discerning whether or not something is from Satan. That is why I have not been destroyed.

There are countless people in the spirit world. Compared to that, the population of the earth is so small. Once we surmount the national level, we will be able to mobilize the spirit world. The people of the world are not a problem. When such a time comes, you should know that our time is near.

From this perspective, we can see the outlines for the future of the democratic world and that of the communist world. (54-232, 1972.3.24)

In the next world, murderers, victims and all sorts of people are gathered. There are people brandishing knives and seeking revenge. There are so many walls which divide them. So, there are times when evil spirits go to the descendants of their enemies and cause sudden death

by an accident in order to bring them to the spirit world. These things must all be resolved. For that to happen, they must first be resolved on earth. To do that, something better must be offered. It can not be done without offering something that is better than the death of an enemy, something that is better than that which gave rise to their resentment.

What can we use to liberate the spirit world and God? Since such relationships were created by the ancestors of humankind who messed up the spirit world, their descendants must now compensate for their mistakes. If children wish to practice filial piety, they should pay back their parents' debts.

In that sense, you should create a movement to demolish the walls blocking your ancestors in the spirit world. When you do that, they will come looking to teach you. This sounds like a dream but it is very real.

I know what kind of people your ancestors are and what they did. When I look at the faces of the descendants of evil spirits, they darken. The faces of their ancestors quickly appear and abruptly disappear. That is how I discern if it is a good or evil spirit.

Since the spirit world must be brought together, people who cannot bring order to the spirit world cannot unify the universe. As the root of heavenly fortune is found in the spirit world, how could people who are unable to bring order to the spirit world incorporate those results into the way of this earthly world and unify it? For this reason, the spirit world must be unified before the physi-

cal world. (191-204, 1989.6.24)

Have any of you ever met me in your dreams? Everybody should have that experience. There is no such group in the secular world or in any nation. How has the Unification Church been able to grow worldwide? Wherever I send you as missionaries, you should live with the actual sensations of the spirit world.

What are some of the things that have happened? After three months, a missionary must leave the country and get a re-entry visa. Without doing so he can not stay in that country. Not only that, he can not freely leave that country to go to another. At such times, the spirit world will guide him. It will tell him to cross a certain river at a certain place. There will be many crocodiles in that river. If he were to swim across that river, the crocodiles would swallow him whole, leaving nothing behind. The spirit world will guide him through such dangerous places to cross the border. It will tell him the precise hour and minute to cross. If he does not do it, then there is nothing else he can do. There are many missionaries who went back and forth across the border by receiving orders like that through revelations.

The entire communist realm is a world that denies and opposes the existence of God. When a religion enters any country, the Communist Party stamps it out. Under such circumstances, God has to be in a state of readiness.

People who have such experiences cannot deny the existence of God. The

deep emotions of experiencing these things will remain forever, transcending physical life. The experience of having passed through life while loving God and longing for True Parents in that state, will remain for eternity. It becomes the center of your lives. At that moment, the walls dividing you from the spirit world will instantly disappear. You can go there directly.

Which comes first, faith or knowledge? What we believe in is far from fact and what we know conforms to fact. Do you really put your faith into action in your life? Your life experience surfaces in your religious life. You have no idea of the fortune you possess and of how grateful we should be for the dignity of living in connection with the substantial realm that is actually expressed, not merely held as an internal faith! There is such a state.

It is fearful to realize that the spirit world and God exist beyond any shadow of a doubt, no matter who denies it. That is the heart that belongs to the world of God. However much hardship such people undergo on earth, they are the citizens of God's nation. They are God's children.

Ask yourselves if you are in such a state that you would never change your heart, however difficult things may get. You must get that far. It is the summit. When you scale Satan's ramparts and enter the spirit world, God's existence will be proven. If you do not accomplish it, it will be like crossing the drawbridge of a castle but not entering its palace. Until the moment you gain entry, you

will not be able to know anything. However much you may gaze at that castle, you cannot get in. (224-108, 1991.11.23)

4.4. Reception in spirit world according to heart and actual results

My pride is in knowing God. My knowledge of Him is deeper than that of the spirit world about Him. However many people there may be, the person that God likes the most is the one who understands His heart. (146-333, 1986.8.10)

Even if religious people pray drenched in tears for their entire lives until their knees are buried in the ground, it is still not certain that they will meet Jesus and be guided by him. Despite all this, it is a historic event for you to come here, meet me and be able to hear these words. Whether you confer upon me any qualifications or not, I have already acquired all the necessary qualifications.

I have accomplished many things. I unified the world's scholars – who do not listen to anybody – by knitting them together. Also, I knitted together conflicting religions and races and held a huge global wedding, the likes of which never happened before in history.

My accomplishments thus far exceed those of anyone in the spirit world. I have worked harder than anyone else. That being the case, will the Unification Church be at the tail end of the spirit world, or will it rise to the top spot? It will be at the top. This is not something I have made up. (146-335, 1986.8.10)

4.5. Making spiritual experiences part of daily life

The principle of heaven and earth is very simple – I realized this after researching and checking all positions, going around even the back alleys of the spirit world. The truth is simple. Two things unite through an absolute force, creating a vacuum for God to enter that place and become the core, like the marrow of a bone. The two pieces of masculine and feminine love are stuck together. This is the core of the universe. The ideal substance of love unites them to become the axis of love. (170-170, 1987.11.15)

I know so much about the spirit world but I seldom speak about it. Many people go insane after knowing about the spirit world. Women in particular might look at their husbands and say, “Why should I live with that person for such a long time? I should quickly go to heaven. The heaven that Father spoke about sounds so good that I cannot wait to go there.” However, she cannot go to heaven unless she educates her husband and takes him there with her. (182-59, 1988.10.14)

I have spiritual experiences, but because I never talk about them you do not know whether I have them or not. How do I deal with them? After reconciling them with the truth – by taking the way of harmonizing perfect virtue with reason, while constantly aligning with the direction of heaven’s providential view – I can bring about the progress of the spiritual and physical worlds.

In order to do that, you must know how the spirit world moves, how it relates to the truth, and then bring those actions into your daily life so that you connect with it. The divine spirit and the truth must be one. They must create harmony because we human beings are made that way. (76-137, 1975.2.2)

4.6. We go to the spirit world after leaving our love behind

Many people went to the spirit world while following me. They infiltrated the Soviet Union’s satellite countries and main cities. Sometimes I even received reports of them being sentenced to death due to their missionary activities. Receiving such reports, a leader’s heart is serious. Even if his child is seriously ill, he has no time to worry about him. They respect me because I care for the world. I am in the position to shed tears for them and care for them. For that reason, I cannot live an easy life.

Since I must surmount all the peaks I can and will do my best to fulfill my responsibilities. I cannot rest even if I want to, and I cannot stop even if I want to. Since I have spent my days that way, I now find myself advanced in age. However, my heart must start anew from now on. Then I will go to the spirit world while doing that. What will be left behind from my life? I must leave behind the fact that I loved humankind. Everything else regardless of what it is, except for the love of the nation and the Unification Church, will fall away in the ruins of history. (136-135, 1985.12.22)

Section 5. True Parents' Family and the Spirit World

5.1. The establishment of the right of the eldest son

Through my son, Heung-jin, going to the spirit world, Abel and the angels – who had been completely separated like earth and heaven – were bound together like twins. Upon that unified foundation, parents could be mobilized. This is the view of the Unification Principle.

Heung-jin is the Abel-type son who went to the spirit world on the basis of establishing conditions of indemnification for the realm of dominion of the Principle, which was established through True Parents' love. He went to the spirit world from the position of having conquered the realm of Satan's dominion and having realized the realm of God's direct dominion. He attained the state of being the son who went to heaven with the qualification of having perfected himself for the first time since the Fall.

Originally, if people had not fallen, they would have passed into the spirit world with the qualification of owners or sons centered on love based on the family foundation. That is where the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle and the realm of direct dominion are unified with that of True Parents' heart. By the Principle one cannot go to heaven without this foundation.

Since Jesus and Christians went to spirit world without reaching that point,

until now they have all remained in the middle realm of the spirit world. With Heung-jin passing, however, a central point was established where they could be engrafted to God. Since Heung-jin received the Blessing and his spouse is still on earth, he can stand in the same position as having a family in his lifetime.

Thus, centering on Heung-jin's family, the spiritual foundation on which one can visit one's family on earth has been established. This is precious. The establishment of Heung-jin's family is precious.

If such work could have been done, despite Jesus' death, Christianity would not have needed to sacrifice as it did until now. Yet there has been no other way. Why? Jesus had to go to the other world and return because, within the realm of True Parents' heart, separation from Satan could not be done within the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle; and because the foundation of love was not established within the realm of direct dominion.

Yet Heung-jin does not need to come again. Heung-jin lives both in the spirit world and on earth. That being so, what will happen? The spiritual and physical worlds have become like twins from the standpoint of the realm of heart. The parents are in the eldest son position. From the viewpoint of generations, vertically the parents are above and Heung-jin of the second generation is below.

Yet in the spirit world this is reversed. In terms of our birth on earth, I am in the

position of the elder brother and Heung-jin in that of the younger brother. I am in Cain's position and Heung-jin in Abel's position. In the spirit world, Heung-jin becomes the eldest son. He is in the position of the elder brother and all the other spirits are in the position of younger siblings. Based on the realm of heart, that is how it is. From God's standpoint, He is the Father, I am the elder son and Heung-jin is the younger son.

In the spirit world, Heung-jin is the eldest son based on the realm of love and all others in the spirit world stand in the position of younger siblings. There is a reversal. Thus, we reach the conclusion that the standard of heart for the right of the eldest son finds its correct position and settles there. You must teach this well when giving a Principle lecture. Now, in accordance with the realm of heart, before all the people in the spirit world, including even Jesus and all the good saints, Heung-jin is first to be born as the eldest son. From the viewpoint of the realm of heart, Heung-jin is the first son and the others are the second sons who are next to be born.

Consequently, Heung-jin can let the realm of the second son inherit the blessings of the right of the first son. Satan tried to prevent this from happening by plundering the inheritance. But Heung-jin, who now stands in the realm of the first son, delivered all the blessings he received while on earth. So there is a connection being made. Heung-jin unceasingly endeavors to pass these blessings on, whereas the satanic world resists doing so. (131-52, 1984.4.1)

5.2. The center of love established in the spirit world

Since Heung-jin left behind the condition of having loved the whole world on behalf of the True Parents by offering his life, you are also linked to that destiny of loving the world with your life. Heung-jin went instead of the True Parents. For that reason, loving Heung-jin becomes a condition for loving the True Parents. Your love for Heung-jin is linked to your love for the True Parents.

In the spirit world, there has been no center until now. There was no center to be able to connect to the spirit world; but because of Heung-jin, all spirits who love him can be connected to the condition of loving the Father. They can connect to the Unification Church. For the Unification Church, Heung-jin set the standard on earth by fighting at the cost of his life. For the spirit world, he is its first representative in history to be connected with love. On earth, he has set an example to Unification Church members of loving God's will even at the sacrifice of his life. What he is telling you to do is to love the True Parents. You must go on loving True Parents for the sake of the world. By Heung-jin going to the spirit world, the spirit world came to love him, and by doing so, the relationship of love with the True Parents on earth was established.

Thus, for the spirit world, the day it received Heung-jin was the most joyful day in history. He opened the gates of the spirit world as the messiah of love and opened the way of an exemplary

martyr on earth. That is why Unification Church members should love him.

If both those in the spirit world and in the Unification Church love Heung-jin, what should the True Parents do? In order to welcome the love of God and the love of the earth, they should be honored to offer their own son. They must know how to be able to think of it proudly. God could not love teenaged Adam and Eve as His son and daughter, but now, at least in the spirit world, He can love them.

That is why I prayed, “I could not glorify You by laying the foundation for Korea during my youth; I could not comfort you on the basis of laying and indemnifying the global foundation in my generation. Please indemnify these things through my son!”

Since the spirit world and the earth love him, I must establish the standard that his parents also love him. I believe Heung-jin will establish the realm of resurrection of love in the physical and spirit worlds. Through his death, love will be resurrected. Holding on to the spiritual and physical worlds, I will proclaim the realm of the resurrection of love. With that done, we will bid goodbye to the realm of death. For that reason, you should not be sad even at funerals. (130-201, 1984.1.15)

5.3. The establishment of the kingship on earth and in the spirit world

Right after the Unification Ceremony on the day before Heung-jin went to the spirit world, what did I pray? I prayed,

promising him, “Even though you are leaving the physical world, I will choose an adopted son for you as if you were still on earth, and let him join the ranks of the son.” For that reason, I have to give him the Blessing on earth. Without doing so, it would be impossible for me to keep my promise. God has sent the Messiah to save the earthly world. You should know that today, in order for True Parents to save the spirit world, I have sent a prince of love as my ambassador with full authority. Why must I establish such a global foundation on earth? Even Jesus could not reach that position. You should know the fact that, for the first time in history, God has a young son whom He can love as His own. For the first time, God loves from the spirit world and True Parents love from earth. Thus, the two worlds are connected. Since this world was in the realm of fallen love, that is, in the indirect dominion of God, it had no connection with the love of True Parents until now. Yet you must know the amazing fact that this has finally emerged.

Now, what happens when Heung-jin goes to the other side? You must know that since he was born as a Korean, he will appear as the fruit of good Korean kings. Heung-jin’s position in the spirit world is that of king. From this perspective, compared to those kings, even though Heung-jin is young in age, he is the Abel king. In the spirit world, as in the physical world, all circumstances are known. The two worlds will be completely one. When Cain and Abel become one, the heavenly parents can work on the basis of that foundation.

The heavenly parents gain the right to work. Thus, as Heung-jin's position as king and the Korean Abel kings' position becoming one, a Korean-centered sovereignty forms. When that becomes one, he stands in the position of the Abel king.

After that, all kings will stand in the realm of Abel. You do not know this since you are on earth, but in the spirit world, unity is achieved instantly. Thus, with all kings centering on Korea, 120 nations can be completely united. Since those who can become Abel before that king – those who believed in Judaism or Christianity and died, all established those kingships in preparation to serve the Messiah, and all Abel peoples within the sphere of religion who in turn revere him – will become completely united.

Yet there is one problem. Heung-jin cannot establish the position of king alone. Finding the queen becomes an issue, the first issue. To unite the kingships, a queen must be found to be the king's partner. When that happens, this kingship is connected to the spirit world.

Also, since his queen is on earth, a foundation can be laid that enables him to bring people belonging to the kingships of 120 nations and connect with the earth. This brings the unification of

the spiritual and physical worlds centering on God's love. By his marriage, Heung-jin can freely come to the earth to take action.

Heung-jin does not come alone; all kings of the united kingship can follow him to the earth. Therefore, I had to conduct this ceremony. When you go out, those who oppose us will say all sorts of things about me. I am doing this to send Heung-jin to the spirit world as the representative of love to work on behalf of the True Parents.

For that reason, fifty days after Heung-jin's ascension is the same as the day of Pentecost. The Holy Spirit descended in the upper room of Mark's house, the people received the fire which spread throughout the world. In the same way, with Hoon-sook's marriage, the kings from 120 nations in the spirit world will come to the earth, and they will resurrect to establish the worldwide movement. That is how the kingships of 120 nations in the spirit world come to the earth and become one with the physical world. We find these two remarkable points of significance.

Thus, if there is just one nation among 120 nations that can serve the True Parents anywhere, the gates of the Kingdom of Heaven will be opened from there.

(131-13, 1984.2.20)

CHAPTER SIX

Our Position in Relation to the Spirit World

Section 1. The Fruit of Life and the Divine Spirit

Our lifetime is but a moment. This lifetime will determine whether we are connected to eternity or to the moment. If the current lifestyle is extended, it could go on indefinitely. On the other hand, if it is broken, from that point on a new heaven and earth unfolds. Like a scale, some go up and some go down.

You all are the historically resurrected bodies of your ancestors, wearing their faces. How long is this history? It is said to be hundreds of thousands of years old. The purpose of this long, arduous course of history was to eventually create one person – you. For example, to create one such person from the Kim family, countless ancestors came and went. Thus, we are the fruits of human history.

Would you like fruit if it had big holes eaten through it by worms? Would you like apples with dark seeds easily rolling out when you cut them in half, or those with sticky seeds stuck to the core? If you were opened, do you think a well-ripened seed would come out? Are you sure that your second generation will become a heavenly fruit? If your heart was cut open, do you think that a well-

ripened Unification Church member would come out?

Would it be all right for this substantial fruit of six thousand years to fall without ripening, like a fruit dropping from its tree? Should the fruit, worrying that the wind might blow, say, “Oh no, it looks like I might fall. If the wind blows a bit more, I am going to fall. Father, don’t shake me, just let me be still.” There may be some people here who are like that. On the other hand, there are members saying, “Even if you take an ax and shake the branches as you please, my branches will never fall until they have been cut.” To which group do you belong? (46-154, 1971.8.13)

We know that birth, marriage and death are important stages in our life. In order for individuals to bear fruit after their birth and having grown up, they must establish a bond with their partner, thereafter walking a path together until the end. The same holds true for a nation; it also has a period to lay its foundations, followed by a period of prosperity, after which it must go through an evening-like period.

When individuals become life spirits, they must have some content that allows life to bear fruit within them. If they do

not, when the fruiting season arrives, they will not be able to see fruition.

For this reason, we must overcome our circumstances. Not only that, we must also inherit all the conditions that can bear fruit, thereby possessing the inherent strength that generates that fruition. Only then can we complete the process of fruition, becoming a fruit needed for the progress of a new social and historical course.

After birth, people must overcome their circumstances on their own. They must undergo a process through which they can inherit new life and bear fruit in the future. Finally, they must occupy a place where they can manifest the proper effects and results. For example, after grain is sown, it germinates, matures, bears fruit, and is then harvested and stored by the owner. We too must undergo a process whereby we can be harvested for a certain purpose.

You must understand that you are responsible to equip yourselves with the inner conditions which will permit you to inherit such hopes and to use those conditions to embrace the external environment. This must be accomplished not from a position of self-defense, but by taking the initiative.

Consider the persimmon tree that blooms in spring. Its flowers are not particularly colorful compared to other flowers. Their color is similar to that of the tree's leaves. For this reason, with a casual glance you would not notice the flowers. Later, while the fruit is growing, because of the dense blanket of green foliage, you cannot easily tell whether

there is fruit or not. The green leaves are so bright and fresh that it is hard to tell whether or not the tree has fruit. When summer turns to autumn, the persimmon's color begins to change. As they ripen, both the inside and outside turn orange. Then you see them hanging radiantly on the tree even after all of the leaves have fallen.

It is similar with Unification Church members. Looking at the Unification Church, if the 1970s are said to be the fruiting season, then all the leaf-like elements should disappear. Just as the persimmon fruit exposed on a bare branch can possess the value of the entire tree, the question is whether we can become like that fruit.

Such fruit does not need any advertisement. By looking at the fruit itself, anyone could evaluate it one hundred percent inside and out. How much labor would the persimmon tree have to expend until it could perfect itself by bearing its fruit through this process? We must understand that until this fruit was perfected from among the numerous flowers that bloomed on the tree's branches, it suffered and made more effort than any other type of fruit. We must understand that it overcame all kinds of environmental ordeals which could have caused it to fall: adverse circumstances like lack of nourishment that would prevent ripening and the ordeals of summer with its buffeting winds, rain, and storms.

If that tree could bear only one fruit, that lone fruit would contain the combined sap and external fight-to-live

qualities of that entire tree. Only that kind of fruit could remain. If only one fruit remained on that tree, it would represent the value of the entire tree. In the case of a persimmon tree, that one persimmon would justify the value of that tree when autumn came, and save its dignity and authority.

If many flowers bloomed and much fruit ripened on a tree, but it all rotted and the tree could not bear fruit in the autumn, that tree, with its barren branches, would be so very miserable and sorrowful! If that tree could not bear much fruit, but bore just one that was beyond comparison with those of any other tree, it would stand proud of that one fruit before myriads of other trees.

There are numerous religions in our present society. Numerous denominations exist in Christianity alone. Amidst this reality, looking at the Unification Church in its fruiting season, God is asking for a certain fruit from it. As I have mentioned, even though a tree should bear much fruit, yet only bore one so perfect as to be unsurpassed by any other fruit from that tree, that tree can find its value, authority, and dignity through that one fruit.

Likewise, the Unification Church must bear fruit. Starting from its establishment until now, our church has undergone acute hardships and ordeals while advancing toward its fruition. The critical issue here is the quality of the fruit it will bear. From this perspective, you should be able to check whether you have indeed experienced a normal spring, normal summer, and normal

autumn and whether you can bear a fully ripe fruit.

Looking at the fruit itself, we find within it the properties to produce branches, leaves, roots, and seeds. If we picked a fruit, it could be considered that we possessed that entire tree. Since that fruit has many seeds, with that fruit we stand in a position to possess tens or hundreds of trees. The fruit of a tree should inherit all the essential elements of life that the tree has to bequeath, be it ten or twenty years old. Only then is a perfect fruit harvested.

While the fruit is growing, its essential elements should never be severed. It should be left undisturbed to grow continuously. From the day its life began until the time it is harvested by the owner and kept in storage, the essential elements should never be disconnected, not even once. Whether it is windy – or worse still, stormy, they must not be disconnected no matter what hardships may come. These essential elements must be retained without interruption, from beginning to end.

From this perspective, after venturing on the path of faith, you must have all felt new life, new ecstasy, and new hope springing up within yourselves. From the day you resolve to become such trees, or people of such character, all the inner essential elements that are being prepared for the harvest season in autumn must be retained without interruption. Without a process to solidify and add something as the days go by, a fully ripened fruit cannot emerge. (36-10, 1970.11.8)

Section 2. Judgment and Approval (Certification)

2.1. Categories of Judgment

God knows that the way of the Principle cannot be walked without loving one's enemies. Would God let humanity perish in the judgment of the Last Days? No. He is the Parent of humankind. The so-called judgment by fire spoken of in Christianity today is not a literal one. (31-165, 1970.5.24)

Between teachers and students, there are rules for teachers to observe and rules for students to observe. Likewise, in the Unification Church, there are rules that I should observe, and rules that you should observe. Therefore you who hear the Word are subject to judgment by the Word. If you hear it wrongly, you will be judged.

Then, what activities should we undertake next? We are to realize substance. That being the case, if we fail to undertake activities that substantiate the Word, there will be a judgment of substance. There is judgment by the Word, judgment of substance, and judgment of heart. We must undergo the three great processes of judgment.

First, the word of the Principle will judge you and after that, you will be subjected to the judgment of substance. Who will judge? Those who substantiated the word by working hard in fundraising and witnessing, and who followed all the rules, they will judge you. Those who worked hard will judge you;

that is judgment. If you do not follow the Word, even Satan will judge you and others will accuse you. I will judge Unification Church members; the Unification Church leaders will judge them, and those who followed the will of the Unification Church will judge them.

What way should you go? First you are recognized by family members in the satanic world, then by me. After that, you go to God in the spirit world. That is the way to go, by the way of the law. Going that way is the right direction. If there are any conditions for accusation, they will join forces to accuse you in the flesh. It will be a judgment of substance. Will lies work in that situation? Doing something unwillingly is like not doing it at all. If you do it thinking of God and Father, their essence will be embedded inside your shell, like a fully mature chestnut embedded inside the burr. When you think of God and me dwelling in your heart, my words and God's Word will become your core.

Unification Church members should become people whom God, I, and other members can welcome. So you must be like the kernel of the chestnut when the burr is cracked open. We should live for God and True Parents. That is what you are to do. If you wish to live for the sake of God and True Parents after going to the spirit world, your lifestyle on earth should be in step with that kind of life. That is how harmony is achieved.

For this reason, you should go through a process of passing the fearful judgment of substance. That is the law. On that day, a foundation of heart will

automatically come into being. When you work hard fundraising and witnessing, why do people persecute and accuse you? That experience allows you to find heart, a heart you did not have, and to find love. It happens so that you can love such people.

Without undergoing such a training course, however much you try to become heavenly people, you will not make it. In other words, you should find love greater than that in the satanic world. Otherwise you cannot go to heaven. We are trying to go to heaven by finding love and only those who have found love can go there.

Who will be the Lords of judgment at that time? God, Jesus, and I will be the Lords of Judgment. Therefore you should put these things into practice. You should know that this is the task we are confronting and it is God's command. (103-236, 1979.3.1)

2.2. Prepare a passport to Heaven

The final judgment day will come for everyone. In order to establish the ultimate ideal world in the midst of the satanic world, you should have gone through all kinds of experiences and be able to pass the test given at the time of judgment.

You need a passport to heaven. There should be many individuals, families, and nations who can receive this passport. To be entrusted by heaven and earth, a nation with this passport must exist for God. That is the original ideal of creation.

This passport will expel Satan. He will be unable to come to you, or to interfere in your daily life. If you wish to free yourself from his interference, you should separate yourself from him. You should separate as individuals, families, tribes, people, nations, the world, and the cosmos. In the Unification Principle, you learned about the history of separating from Satan. How must it be done? It must be done through the way of indemnity.

Scholars or presidents are no exception. The way of indemnity is one that must be sought, not taught. You must seek it yourselves. Those who do not do this will go to hell. You must understand that the chains of hell are hooked all over your eyes, your nose, and your thoughts. This is not a threat; it is simply that indemnity is needed to reverse the Fall.

It is so difficult to erase ink from a white sheet of paper. What Satan wrote is more difficult to erase than ink. If you wish to erase it, you must be revived after dying. Realize that "although you have the name of being alive, yet you are dead." As long as hooks remain within you, Satan will claim you as his. Thus, Jesus stated: "Those who seek to die will live, and those who seek to live will die." (129-183, 1983.10.30)

Since there are saints and sages and great people like Jesus, Confucius, and Buddha in the spirit world, by what accord will you ascend there? Also, there will be many martyrs there who died during the period of persecution in

Rome, and many other people who were sacrificed for the public cause. Then, how can you go up there, what will you need? Just to join a platoon in the U.S. Army, you need a certificate. So can you just step up and ascend to that lofty place called the spirit world?

In the world beyond time and space where many hundreds of billions are gathered watching you, are you confident that you will be welcomed? In the spirit world, there is no distance. They will be watching you ascend. How can you go up there? In order to pass through to that place, you need a certificate. Without it, you cannot pass through. Can you go there saying, "I'm going to bring my doctorate in literature"? In the spirit world, it has even less value than toilet paper.

Why are we trying to go to the spirit world by going through opposition from this fallen, evil world? It is to receive a certificate. This is not something secular. If I had gone out into the world, I would have attained success to the extent that I would envy no one. I am a man of such abilities. (146-330, 1986.8.10)

Jesus inherited the heavenly kingdom, but not the world. Then who inherited the world? Cain. Therefore, the world is Cain's domain. For this reason, once Abel inherits the heavenly kingdom, he should receive a certificate issued and guaranteed by Cain who belongs to the world. To enter heaven, you need to obtain a certificate from Satan.

Fallen people are caught between these two rules governing heaven and

earth. As they have not been resolved, history has been prolonged and repeated through the past six thousand years. Nevertheless, we have now come to understand this. In the Bible it is written, "You will know the truth, and the truth will set you free." As we now know the answer, we must love even if we have to clench our teeth. To what level must we love? We must love even Cain who is our enemy. (34-277, 1970.9.13)

Since the Fall took place, not in God's presence, but with Satan as subject, we must subjugate Satan in order to free ourselves from its realm. We must be able to say and claim before Satan, "Satan, you wretch! I am where I am now because of you. I will subjugate you and return to God!" If you do not obtain the certification that you subjugated Satan, you cannot receive God's love.

Jesus, too, was victorious in overcoming the three great temptations. We cannot go to heaven without obtaining Satan's signature that we were historically victorious. No matter what, we must obtain Satan's signature. When Jesus overcame Satan's three great temptations, Satan acknowledged tearfully, "You are eternally different from me." (24-336, 1969.9.14)

To subjugate Cain, we must love him all the way to the end. Without being such people, we cannot save Cain. To go to heaven, we must obtain Satan's certificate. What is Satan's certificate? In order for a criminal to be released, he must first go through a prosecutor, then an

attorney, and finally a judge. From this perspective, Satan is like the prosecutor, God the judge, and Jesus is the attorney. If Satan ensnares a person saying, "You did this and this, did you not?" and says to God, "This person should be dealt with in this way," God's hands are tied. But Jesus, in the position of an attorney would say, "Heavenly Father, this person's ancestors did such and such things and he is from a good lineage. Since he is accused on these counts, he should be given an indemnity condition related to his crimes so he can be freed from accusation." This is what has been happening.

Hence, if you want to go to heaven, you must get Satan's certificate. Without getting a certificate that we loved Satan, we can never go to heaven. That is what the Unification Church is doing.

Normally we treat those who oppose us as enemies. Instead, we should love them, even though it is stifling. We must love our enemies and pray for them to have good fortune. We have no choice. Unless Cain and Abel become one, there will be no restoration, and you cannot return to your Parent. (48-316, 1971.9.26)

Christianity has passed through a history of seeking the true olive tree, while innumerable people have pioneered a miserable destiny throughout the ages. The true olive tree refers to the son of God. Once he comes, you must receive his sap as well as engrafting onto one of his branches. All conditions left unresolved in history, the failures of all our ancestors through the ages

who could not overcome the indemnity conditions presented by Satan, will be resolved at that point. You should be engrafted, not from a foundation of fertile soil or a warm shelter, but from ground that is rough and stony. That is because you must receive from Satan a certificate that you can become God's child, since you have been equipped with the original nature that has not existed in the satanic world until now. It is not something that God gives. If it had been up to God, He would have issued this six thousand years ago.

The judge does not approve your release from prison. Who will? The prosecutor gives his approval. In this court, the prosecutor is Satan. Without obtaining the endorsement of the prosecutor in court, you cannot be released. Without Satan's approval, God does not say, "You are my child. Let me save you!" You must absolutely get Satan's approval. Have you received Satan's release or not? You must get it.

What does the Unification Church teach? It teaches the way to obtain Satan's approval. You must not only get a spiritual approval, but also a substantial one that combines both the spirit and the flesh. (17-124, 1966.12.11)

You cannot obtain a passport to heaven just like that. A doctorate obtained merely by sitting through classes without passing a test or writing a dissertation would be a fake. Even in the Unification Church there are real members and fake ones. You become real members only after fulfilling the right

standard. (129-185, 1983.10.30)

You cannot go to heaven simply because you have a clean and pure heart. You need to go through procedures in order to enter heaven. In order to be registered, you need a license, don't you? However much you may insist that you are an absolutely pure person, you cannot just go to heaven. There are formalities to go through.

The visa and documentation procedures for entering the United States, in its current state of decline, are very complicated. Yet it is more complicated for us to enter heaven than to enter America. You must complete all the legal procedures. You need to learn that.

Therefore, this is not the Unification Church, but the unification university. It is the university of Heaven. All the instructions that I have given on earth become the conditions for entering the other world. Not being able to fulfill these conditions means not being able to go there.

Upon hearing this, some might wonder if I am only giving instructions without having done anything. However, whatever instructions I give, I have already accomplished them myself. I would not ask you to do these things before I put them into practice. Why? As the True Parent, I must teach you. There is no one with whom I can discuss these matters. I cannot discuss the providence for restoration with the president of the United States. Dr. Durst is here, but I cannot discuss the matter with him. If I did, the archangel would accuse me. The

archangel is the ringleader who caused human beings to fall. Hence, other than God and me, no one knows about these things. (146-335, 1986.8.10)

Now the Unification Church will surmount the global peak. Now no one can destroy the Unification Church. No one can send me to prison. You should not just be busy with married life and giving birth to children. You should be busy preparing a certificate that will let you enter heaven. You do not know when you will die. Who knows when you will be involved in an auto accident and go to the spirit world? All kinds of things occur. So, you never know when you may have to go to the spirit world.

From now on if you as Blessed Family members went to the spirit world while you were enjoying your own personal lives, having fun and neglecting to prepare yourselves to go to the spirit world, could you come before Rev. Moon of the Unification Church? Blessed families did not yet reach the global level because they are at the perfection level of the growth stage. Since they are at the top of the growth stage, they must go on to the global level. Since that course remains, Blessed Families must go through it. Even though I made all the preparations for you to go to the spirit world, if you are still doing nothing, how miserable you will be!

I am not an incapable person. My personality is such that I will not let myself be defeated by anyone. I do not like being trampled upon by anyone, but I have lived such a life. I do not enjoy

opposition, but I have lived a life facing it. Because of this, I clearly know the path that you who have joined the Unification Church must walk. You must quickly transcend the nation and the world. Are you busy with married life taking care of household chores, or are you busy making preparations to go to the spirit world?

I am now living in rhythm with the spirit world; everybody must live in step with the spirit world. When Unification Church members go to the spirit world, you will be questioned at the gates on the conditions I have taught you to fulfill. Everything I have taught up to the present time will be written down as conditions. If you cannot answer to them, you will not be able to get in. You will have to wait in the middle realm of the spirit world for me to come. You may wish for my prompt arrival but even when I do go to spirit world, not all of you can enter the realm where I will go. (146-335, 1986.8.10)

My slogan is, “Let us kick out the devil!” Satan is the villain who has made countless people suffer throughout history. Let us take the position of a prosecutor ourselves, relentlessly accusing Satan of all the evil deeds that he has committed in front of God, the judge of justice and righteousness. We should become the prosecutor and accuse the devil, Satan. Then, will Satan surrender to the prosecutor or not? There will be no attorney available to him, but to humankind there will be one.

Jesus is working as an attorney in the

spirit world. As such, he would say, “This person performed good deeds believing in my name. Heavenly Father, is it not true, based on an agreement made between You and the devil, that the devil cannot take someone who strove to be good, someone who observed the public laws? Is that not true?” Then God would say, “Yes, it is true”.

The devil cannot take people who are placed in a position of goodness in Jesus’ name, which is why people are told to believe in Him. But can you go to heaven just by unconditionally believing in him? I went to the spirit world and saw many scenes in which famous ministers were kneeling down in hell, saying, “I did not realize that Rev. Moon was such a person!” This sounds like a dream, but the teacher you are following is such a person. He is a leader with a deep, theoretical understanding of the higher dimensional world which surpasses this five-dimensional world. Those who want to follow me need to understand these things. (149-98, 1986.11.17)

We must have a nation. You have your own nations, but the nation to which we are going is a different one. Without receiving the officially recognized citizenship of this new nation, one cannot enter heaven. However much he may want to, Satan cannot accuse people with a certified citizenship. He cannot accuse them from any direction whether north, south, east, or west, or any era – past, present, or future.

(148-288, 1986.10.25)

Section 3. Registration in the Spirit World

3.1. Freedoms enjoyed by the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven

Women who are born beautiful are inclined to pursue the external. Home-ly women will inevitably pursue not the external, but rather the internal.

The more people pursue the external, the more trapped they become in Satan's ragged playground; but if they pursue the internal they will come closer to God's side. Those who know how to pursue the internal can freely go toward the external, but those who pursue the external can never come toward the internal.

Then, what kind of people will Uni-fication Church members become? Ideally they will become people who know how to enter the internal world and how to go out into the external world; how to come in after going out, as well as being able to travel north, south, east, and west. We are trying to create people who allow the internal world to become the subject, thus enabling them to have dominion over the external world.

The external world was invaded by evil, so if you go the external way, you will end up going to hell. But if you go to the internal world, you will end up in good spirit world – the Kingdom of Heaven. When you can freely travel to both the internal and external worlds, you can go to hell as well as to heaven. Since I know this fact, I am asserting that we should try to become people who can be welcomed by everyone wherever

we go. That is what God is also asserting. God can freely visit hell. He does not go through any procedures in order to do that. He does not go through procedures to get to His palace in heaven, either. He goes wherever He wants. (116-177, 1982.1.1)

3.2. Special gifts that can be carried to the spirit world

What gift will you carry when you go to God in the spirit world? Not money, nor the prestige of an academic title, nor the love for a spouse, nor a happy life. Such things cannot be gifts. You must take your love for God and your love for the world with you to that place. That is what remains. In John 3:16, it is written: "God so loved the world..." It states that God loves the world; therefore He sent His only begotten son. The only begotten son is the person who came to love the world.

For this reason, if your faith is founded in love, you will not perish. You will be saved. Since the Lord loves the world, we should do likewise. Christianity has become split into many different denominations. There are Christians who don't even think about the world or God. They are perishing while loving only their own denomination and nations; we must love the world and God, transcending our own denomination and nations. (98-329, 1978.8.13)

Even a judge cannot do anything to a murderer without evidence. If the murderer objects, saying, "When did you see me committing the crime?" the judge

cannot do anything to him. However, when he is confronted with evidence, the murderer cannot kick up a fuss. If you have no evidence, you should seek it. A verse of a hymn goes, "Jesus loves me, this I know, for the Bible tells me so." Do you have any evidence? Some people go out to witness, and boast of having evidence of this, but is boasting true evidence? What are you going to do with such evidence? It has nothing to do with you if no one remains from your witnessing efforts.

Do you have a gift to bring along when you go to heaven? When you go to the spirit world, religious martyrs will line up in front of you. Can you unwrap the bundle you brought with you in front of them? Do you think that you can unfold something that is like a beggar's rag which he uses for wrapping his feet? What suffering have you and the Unification Church undergone? How can you say you lived for the nation and the world without having withstood such hardships? I have suffered, but I do not think of it as suffering. Naturally, we still have a long way to go. Upon your arrival in the spirit world, you have to be able to unwrap your bundle and say, "Here is the gift I prepared all throughout my life; please receive it." If a woman must bring a dowry when moving in with her in-laws, how can you go to heaven empty-handed?

As Unification Church members, what mission did you receive from God? As God's elite troops, as His sons and daughters, when you marry you should inherit the lineage of that family. To do

this, you take care of your family's chores and cultivate your independence. Such a holy mission is given to you. Therefore, even if you are separated from me and cannot physically live with me every-day; even if God cannot always instruct you directly, never forget that you are the ones endowed with a mission under God's realm of governance.

Regard yourself as absolute. Be determined to gain eternal guarantees for the fruit that grows from absolute values. These treasures belong to all humankind, future generations, and the spirit world. This is the responsibility given to those appointed by God. Those who do not fulfill that responsibility will be more miserable than beggars. Beggars can at least feed themselves at mealtime by begging for food, but those who fail to fulfill their responsibilities won't be able to eat even porridge at meal-time.

If God gave you ten years to fulfill such a responsibility, during those ten years you should offer your utmost loyalty and devotion. How can you shorten the period of restoring the children's path that can illuminate history and make it a valuable path? To reduce a ten-year period scheduled by God to a seven-year course, you must invest your sweat, blood, effort, and toil. Without exerting greater quantity and quality of effort you cannot have dominion over the nation and world. Unification Church members must become people who can fulfill such responsibilities.

Such an era has arrived. Already the foundation has been laid and work on the exterior has been completed; now

is the era of interior decoration. Since interior decoration requires the personal touch of the owner, I am needed. Things like walls are not of immediate importance, but in order to put into place what is necessary, we need to do things in phases. Hence, we have a time of preparation, a time of performance, and a time of achievement.

We must make appropriate plans for each stage of our life. We must make our utmost effort in preparing during the time of preparation, in performing during the time of performance, and in achieving during the time of achievement. Only then will the interior decorating turn out well. Then, whoever sees the interior décor will compliment its exquisite quality and the high degree of effort invested in it.

A time of preparation will come. You will be appointed to a certain responsibility and you must make preparations while living for the Will. Next comes the time of performance. At that time, you must perform, even if you lose track of night and day. Then comes the time of achievement, the season in which hope is realized. (32-71, 1970.6.21)

3.3. The Kingdom of Heaven created through the Three Great Subjects Principle

The mind stands in God's stead. Your mind represents your predecessors, your ancestors. The mind represents the teacher as well as the ruler. Yet, how long has the mind been held in disdain and contempt? The mind represents the one

being who, as the center of the universe, stands in the position of the true parent, the true teacher, and the true lord. It exists as the subject of true love. How much has the mind been sacrificed to keep us in order on the earth?

Though it is treated contemptuously and dragged around, when you have evil thoughts and commit theft at dawn, your mind protests against you time and again saying, "Hey, you wretch!" How long have we trifled with such a mind? It stands in the place of parent, teacher, and lord. In the world of the mind, no trials are needed. You know yourself better than anyone else. No third party or witness is necessary.

We cannot stand proudly before our parents; we are ashamed before our teachers, before the rulers of our nation, and we are ashamed before God. Hence we must repent. In order to return to our original homeland, we must repent. In the original homeland, we must attend God as our King. He is the King of the universe, nation, tribe, and family.

God is the Teacher of the universe, nation, tribe, and family. He is also their Lord. This is the three-great-subjects thought. Having the essence of the love that lives for others and then forgets about doing so, this three-great-subjects thought represents the heavenly nation.

If we could entirely possess the three-great-subjects thought, that would be most ideal. But even if we do not, when we stand in the position of true parents, teachers will stand on the right, and lords on the left. Therefore, it would be best if you can stand in one of these

three positions. Whether you become true parents, true teachers, or true lords, if you stand in at least one of those positions, your registration in the Kingdom of Heaven will not be a problem. (209-154, 1990.11.28)

3.4. Conditions for registration

The Fall means to be separated from the Word in substance and heart. So you should first know the Word and practice it. In practicing the Word, we must proceed with a parental heart. Only those who substantiated restoration through indemnity can be given the Blessing. Lip service does not work. It is through your actions that you can become part of the heavenly clan; you become a life spirit of this nation.

Among the spiritual phenomena connected to our life, there are form spirits, life spirits, and divine spirits. Since they are the objective elements of the spirit world, they progress through the same destinies as those on earth. Once you become divine spirits, the course of restoration requires us to register our position. Thus, from then and there you register and enter your proper position. This is the course of restoration. Once that connection is made and you are registered, however many mistakes you make or however many misdeeds you commit, you can no longer be governed by the laws established in the satanic world. Americans cannot be governed by Korean laws because their nationality is different. When you enter a certain realm, only the laws of that realm will

apply to you. Therefore, once you transcend the laws of the satanic world, they no longer apply to you no matter what. In the end, earthly laws will not affect you either, since they do not apply to you. Here, you must set up corresponding indemnity conditions. Then you do not end up going to hell.

Once born, we must eventually die. That is the formula. Then after death, where do we go? All Unification Church members know they have a spirit self. This spirit self must grow.

What will become an issue for you in the future is that one day you will have to write your autobiography. Such a time will come. The question is what you have done since joining the Unification Church and what will be contained in that record. If you worked at a company as an employee, it is not a valuable condition and such a record will not be helpful at all. It will be shameful to have worked at a company after joining the church. Such a time will come.

In the future, a process known as registration will be established. When North and South Korea are reunified, you must be registered. The term tribal messiah is not the issue. The contents and facts associated with that term are what matters. From now on, the content of the term will become indemnity conditions for you to walk on your own eternal path of life. When you go to the other world, what matters is how much effort you made to have experiences in your heart, walking such paths, and even more so, to what extent you brought substantial results.

You will not be able to find the path of salvation in the ordinary, habitual lifestyles you have pursued until now. You must walk the path of complete indemnity. The providence of salvation is the providence of restoration, and the providence of restoration is the providence of re-creation. Therefore, in order to be re-created, you must enter the original position untainted by the Fall, the position of zero. There, consciousness, habits that we have and surnames like Kim or Lee, will not exist. You must enter such a zero position. Viewed from God's original standard of creation, every created being began from the zero point.

Because of the Fall, this world is filled with everything contrary to the way of going to heaven. These must be cut off. This cannot be achieved by words. The world is filled with the varied habits and customs of different races of diverse historical and cultural backgrounds, bound to the life and lineage of Satan, based on his love. These habits are not eradicated by mere words. The Bible states that those who seek to die will live. This establishes the paradoxical logic: you must seek to die in order to live. You must invest your lives.

Because of that, we must launder everything. In other words, we need to restore them through indemnity. Such a process is absolutely necessary. As long as the habits or sinful nature that you used to have in the fallen world remain, you cannot form a relationship with God. (213-97, 1991.1.16)

When you go to the spirit world, if

you have not completed a seven-day fast for God, you cannot be registered in that world. Why? Since God has been toiling in the course of the 6,000-year history of restoration, you must fast while contemplating God's efforts. Hence, the Unification Church has the tradition of the seven-day fast. It is not to make you suffer, but to let you set the condition of having struck your body before heaven.

(17-182, 1966.12.18)

How should we live? The way is for individuals to live for their families, families for their tribes, tribes for their races, races for their nations, nations for the world, the world for heaven and earth, and heaven and earth for God and His love. We are to live this way until we die. We are different. Our tradition is firmly established. Why is that so? If we do not establish our tradition, there will be no place for registration upon arrival in the other world. Since it is organized that way, there is no way for those failing to meet those requirements to be registered. There will no place for you. You must reappear as original people unrelated to the Fall, otherwise you cannot get in. This is the view of the Unification Principle. (131-56, 1984.4.1)

You must be registered in the Kingdom of Heaven. Abraham offered himself and the creation on an altar in order to approach God. Since the creation was lost, creation must be offered as a condition for restoration. And since man was also lost, he had to stand in the position of Abel, set up creation in Abel's

position, assist Cain in establishing an acceptable condition, and offer this all to God. Only when done in this way can God accept the offering for the first time. (15-149, 1965.10.7)

What should we do prior to registration, in order to be born as absolute people? Without understanding this clearly, we can never reach the place where we can assert our subject nature before heaven, the place where, having overcome everything, we can stand in the stead of the perfect being.

We human beings were born because of God. The motive for our birth comes through the Creator. We are made by Him, but for what? This is the question. Did He create us because He wanted to leave diamonds to us because He likes them? Did He create us because he wants to bequeath His power, or to pass on all His knowledge because He likes knowledge? What is our origin, our beginning? This is the question. Even if we were to assert ourselves as having originated from the absolute God and being born out of an internal bond with Him, if we do not clearly understand the process for returning to the original homeland in the future, everything now underway will remain unfinished.

The motive for our birth comes from our mother and father. We were born because the lives of our father and mother intertwined. But the inheritance of the characteristics of both parents was not the result of their lives colliding. Beforehand, the fundamental action and motive that connected these

two lives together, was love. When we consider the preciousness of life and love, life is in second place, and love is in first place. (177-305, 1988.5.22)

In order to be registered, we must go to the original homeland. But this is not a simple thing to do. We must follow procedures completely. In any country or land you visit and at any place in the Republic of Korea there is an area where you must register. Whoever you find seated at that counter, be it a man or woman, from whatever walk of life, they must stamp your passport. (177-310, 1988.5.22)

3.5. People who can be chiefs in the spirit world

If you are one with God, you must love Cain. If you stand in the position of receiving God's love, just as you love God with all of your heart, soul, and mind, you must love your tribe, people, and nation. This is the first commandment on earth. It is a commandment not of heaven, but of God's Kingdom on earth. The commandment of God's Kingdom in heaven is to love the Lord your God with all your heart, soul, and mind. However, the first commandment of His kingdom on earth is to love our nation and race with all our heart, soul, and mind.

Hence, the question is how to implant God's love and how to relate to His power and the awesomeness of heaven. To do so, we must have a horizontally vast stage around us. Such

people will become tribal chiefs, patriarchs or chief priests who can inherit God's great achievements eternally in the spirit world. (34-69, 1970.8.29)

In the future, an era of registration for God's nation will come. People will try to be part of the 144,000, won't they? Do you know who the 144,000 are? In order to advance toward the era of registration, your tribal realm must stand in the same position as the homeland of heaven. Then your tribe gets registered in that era.

The era of individual salvation will pass. If the president of a nation is sworn in after joining the Unification Church, his people will also become the citizens of Heaven. Then, by participating in a ceremony officiated by the church, his people will escape from the satanic realm. (219-100, 1991.8.25)

An important question that we

should always think about is how to unite our mind and body and how to bind together our spouses with the whole family. If our body is the formation stage, the couple is the growth stage, and the tribe is the completion stage. That is why you must make your tribes one.

Once North and South Korea are reunified, registration will take place. You must be able to participate in that era so as not to be ashamed of yourselves. Then, what you will need to do is record all your personal history since joining the Unification Church. If you record this incorrectly, you will be stuck in the next world. When you reveal all the details of your personal history and go over them, none of it should stop you. Only after you leave behind a record of achievement, one in which no fault can be found, will you finally enter the age of registration. (213-206, 1991.1.20)

CHAPTER SEVEN

Our Relationship with Those in the Spirit World

Section 1. Spiritual Phenomena and the Liberation of Spirits

1.1. The good spirit world and the evil spirit world

The spirit world is divided into two realms, the satanic realm and God's realm. If we lay out a way that enables people to move quickly from the satanic spirit world to God's world of goodness, then the situation on earth will naturally be resolved. What kind of way is that? As long as we have a special method to enable the transfer of all satanic individuals, families, tribes, and nations to the heavenly side, it is possible.

When such a time comes to the spirit world, it will be reflected on earth. As a result, all kinds of transformation will quickly occur and sweep through that world. (134-14, 1985.1.1)

What is the ideology of the new movement we are actualizing? Since God exists, it is an ideology based on His will. Because God exists, so must the spirit world. The spirit world does exist and it is the place where our numerous ancestors reside. It is the place where the countless number of people on earth today and the myriads of people to come

in the future will all go and live.

In the spirit world too, there are good and evil spirit realms. Evil people must go to the evil spirit realm. If the spirit world has a gathering place for those who can form some relationship with God, then the spirit world, too, is inevitably divided into different realms, those of goodness and those of evil.

Then what constitutes good and evil? God wants the good and evil spirit realms and people on earth to be harmonized. Once they are, every individual will pursue the fulfillment of the ideal dual purposes: the purpose of the individual and the purpose of the whole. People have dual purposes, that of the individual and that of the whole.

What has humankind historically pursued until this time? What is good and what is evil? Why must we live in such misery and run up against obstacles? Because the starting point, process, and final destination have been different. When we analyze the details, it all becomes quite simple. (126-83, 1983.4.12)

It is impossible to properly understand the spirit world without an overview of how it develops, acts, and relates with the earth. The spirit world can be divided into two realms, good and evil.

The spirit world really exists, despite humankind's general lack of awareness of it.

Good and evil spirits are fighting each other even in the spirit world. There's a battle going on in that world too. Good spirits battle continually to lead evil spirits to good places, and evil spirits are doing everything they can to prevent good spirits from going to good places.

Evil spirits are connected to Satan, and people living on earth today are under their influence. Why is that? Regardless of whether they were good or evil, all our ancestors passed away to the spirit world. Good spirits stand on the good side, not because they are completely good from God's point of view, but because they have set the condition of having distanced themselves from satanic influence on earth.

On the way towards God's original ideal world – an ideal realm of goodness to which original people can go – good spirits are fighting to advance toward it, and evil spirits are struggling to block the way. The evil spirit realm and evil earthly world are connected and in constant communication. Good spirits are those who on earth were opposed by and confronted by the evil world and who were also religious people. (134-9, 1985.1.1)

1.2. Spiritual phenomena

If religions were to fight each other in the Last Days, what would happen? We live in a time when such phenomena easily occur. The Unification Church arose in order to protect against that, to pro-

tect by blocking such battles. Thus, in the era of religious wars, we are here to protect both the spirit and the flesh. The spirit world is taking hold of the physical world.

There are hundreds of billions of spirits in the spirit world. Japan's population of one hundred million is nothing by comparison. It is no more than a speck of dust under one's foot. Billions of spirits are on the attack to take hold over the physical world. Neurosis is one resultant phenomenon of this reality.

After the year 2000, people will be able to communicate with each other spiritually. Whether they communicate with evil or good spirits, they may fight even if they are ordered not to make war. This time could come, but the mission of the Unification Principle is to prevent this.

A tall tower produces radio interference. The phenomena of neurosis are like that. The most fearful thing would be if only evil spirits mobilized and attacked the physical world. What would happen if that were case? Regardless of the number of people on earth, they would all be attacked by evil spirits.

God is preparing for that scenario. He is expanding the foundation of the spirit world centering on good spirits. (55-30, 1972.4.23)

1.3. Letters from the spirit world

Recently, a letter came to Dr. Lee Sang-hun from his wife, Han-sook, who is in the spirit world. She wrote: "I had no idea of how wonderful the spir-

it world is or the preciousness of the Blessing. It is like a dream that we are a part of the heavenly Royal Family. It is so wonderful here that I am sorry for coming first. Please forgive me.” In other words, because she went to the spirit world before her husband, and there had these dreamlike experiences – which came on the foundation of her Unification Church life of faith – she was sorry. Everything there was too good.

There are people who are also smart like me. Knowing the spirit world well, have I not lived my whole life in conformity with its program? We have come from one origin and we must return there.

Rivers are created by water that flows into the ocean, evaporates, rises into the atmosphere and then falls back to earth. We too must return to the origin. Life continues in everything through cyclical motion. Without circulation, everything decays back to its basic chemical elements.

What kind of being is God? He is like the mind of this world that exists here and now in the universe. He is like the mind of the universe.

Can you see your mind? The spirit world resembles the mind, but it is the place where the content of the mind is made substantial. It is a place transcending time and space. You can eat whatever you want. There is no need to worry about food, water or clothing. Spirit world transcends everything related to food, clothing and shelter.

Do you need cars there? Are there automobile manufacturing plants?

Would there be factories for food, fabrics or clothing? None exist. Infinite distances can be traveled instantly. By what power? By the power of love. If you want to see someone you love, that person instantly appears.

Love travels at the highest speed and in a straight line. This is not secular love but divine love. Divine love is true love. Once within the realm of true love, because we will be able to move in a straight line at the highest speed, we will be able to operate on the stage of the universe. The universe will be under the control of our thoughts.

Knowing all these things, although I walked alone as a pioneer through the valley of pain and sorrows of this world, I never became bitter. Even now, I am still determined to walk this path until the day I die.

When we die, we will find a railroad track in the spirit world. The railroads in the spirit world are like those on earth passing across national borders. They must be neither too narrow nor too high. They must be the right fit. No religious teaching other than that of the Unification Church knows such things. However proud Christians may be, they are unaware of these facts. Did Jesus ever talk about the spirit world?

In this twentieth century era, we boast about our cutting-edge science. We pursue the formal logic of development, but there is no place other than the Unification Church where we verify the existence of God with a religious theory developed through formal processes. (210-225, 1990.12.23)

Jesus is no longer opposed in this age. Since the time has come when all of Korea can praise my name based on our history of accomplishing a global domain, you should fulfill your responsibilities as tribal messiahs. Now, your tribes, including even your most distant relatives, will be restored at once. Restoring 120 families in six months is no problem. You are now in the elder brother's position.

Heaven and earth will pass away and begin anew. Grandfathers will become grandsons, and fathers will stand in the son's position. The time can be compared to the case where a grandson becomes a king and his grandparents, parents and ancestors have to serve him. The Messiah represents king. In his land, the saints will return and rule in his name as rulers of tribal kingdoms. This will form a realm of liberation in which kingship constitutes part of the national domain.

The homeland of an immense, eternal world is unfolding. Since I do not want you to be pitiful people who have lost your sense of direction and who operate within a limited scope, I am creating a clear, liberated realm in which we can travel freely in all four directions – north, south, east and west – within the vast cosmos.

What must you bequeath to posterity? You must leave behind good things for your nation so that your descendants will live well. Then the people of the nation will protect them. Don't leave money, knowledge or power. Leave patriotic achievements. Everyone said that I would fail, but I resolutely made

preparation so that I could not fail. Thus, I shall not fail under any circumstances. (213-146, 1991.1.16)

1.4. The hope of people in the spirit world

What would people in the spirit world desire? The spirit world is a world where you are supplied with everything according to the standard you find yourself in. If you want something it comes to you immediately. It is a world where nothing is impossible for people who are in the subject position who can digest and react to situations. If I were to talk about this, people would say I'm out of my mind, so I don't.

If you wish to host a party for a million guests, you can do instantaneously because they will all appear at the venue and everything can be prepared at the speed of thought. By contrast, look at today's miserable world. In Korea there are many unemployed people, are there not? We live in such a world. What would create more possibility? In the same way that heat is produced by atomic fission, if you caused the fission of love, possibilities will appear instantaneously. Isn't that likely? (141-277, 1986.3.2)

How shall we connect with that world? In the spirit world, people will want to be in a better position tomorrow than they are today. The common mentality of people living on earth is that they wish for today to be better than yesterday, for tomorrow to be better than today. Regardless of who we are,

be it Occidentals or Orientals, people of the past, present or future, our common mentality is to wish for something better than our present life. This does not change. All people in the spirit world are like that, too. They hope for things to get better than they are at the present. They want their lot in spirit world to improve compared to their lot in earthly life. (141-269, 1986.3.2)

The last six millennia have been a history of seeking and re-creating one Adam. Eve cannot be created without Adam. This is why God is creating one man, Adam. This is why you must follow me. The blood and flesh of countless people who came and went on the road of the providence of restoration had to be used as material for this purpose. The resentment of zillions of spirit people must be consolidated here. Then on the day of the advent of the incarnation of Adam, the martyrs who shed their blood and died under extreme persecution will feel their value for the first time.

Although they are in the spirit world, by connecting with the incarnation on earth, liberation will come to them. This is how it works. It must not be a vague concept, but how is it then that we become conscious of these workings? (29-271, 1970.3.11)

Regardless of what the people next to us are doing, whether eating or resting, we must go that way. In front of us, thousands are constantly going forward. If you strive to go forward and exert your-

selves to the utmost without rest, while pulling the rope, then other people will also pull the rope for you. In the meantime, you will see many people falling away. It's like a marathon competition. In running, there are first and second places. History is like this. Over the past millennia, countless spirit people have been clinging to this rope. If you take first place and go to the spirit world, and then connect with the pulley and reel in the rope completely, both the spiritual and physical worlds will be restored. (32-144, 1970.7.5)

1.5. Liberating those in the spirit world from resentment

We must complete our mission pertaining to the three ages. We are to liberate the people in the spirit world, the people living in the sinful world today, and the future generations to come as well. This is the way liberation for the three generations comes about.

This is an immense and tremendous task. What would happen if such dream-like things came to pass? Your eyes would pop open, your mouth would gape, your ears would perk up, but you will come to bow your head. (28-201, 1970.1.11)

The Unification Church is a group doing what? It is a group for peacemaking and reconciliation. Yet with whom do we reconcile? So far, Jesus and the Holy Spirit have been engaged in this task. They had the mission of giving birth. The mission that Jesus and the Holy Spirit must fulfill is the task of giv-

ing birth to sons and daughters.

The Bible states that women will be saved through childbearing (1 Timothy 2:11-15). Yet members of some established religious orders say that women shouldn't give birth. Then, why would God have created an organ for women to bear children? Those people have misunderstood. This verse tells us that women, symbolically representing Eve, must give birth again in her stead.

Since God could not establish the base for a reciprocal relationship with Eve, who was to bring to fruition the essential characteristics of an original mother, He was unable to wear spirit and body with the original characteristics of a subject partner, so He packed things up again.

Then at the time of Jesus, God sent these characteristics to Jesus' object. Thus, they still have no body. Jesus had a body, but the Holy Spirit did not. This is why we say that the Holy Spirit is like fire, oil, or wind.

Nevertheless, if she carries out her motherly mission, enters our hearts, moves them, and cleanses them of sin, we become clean. It is like a mother giving birth to and raising her child. Just like receiving a father's protection, for rebirth one should have the condition of being reborn under Jesus' protection. Then one can say that rebirth is carried out.

Have Jesus and the Holy Spirit ever rested so far? No, they could not. Has Christianity ever rested? No. While saving fallen people over the past six millennia, has God ever rested? No. None of

them could rest. Then, has the Unification Church ever rested? Has Rev. Moon ever rested? I am still running around like a startled deer.

Why am I like that? I am like that in order to bring about reconciliation so that God, Jesus and the Holy Spirit can rest, and all our ancestors can relax. God is an ancestor too, is He not? Speaking of Christianity, all the saints who have come and gone are our ancestors. Speaking of religion, all the religious leaders of old who came and went are also our ancestors. We must liberate all these ancestors. We must accomplish the work of liberating them from resentment. (75-38, 1975.1.1)

I am thinking about this all the time, as soon as I wake up and even while going to the bathroom. Asleep or awake, I am thinking about this, twenty-four hours a day. That is why I am not indebted to you. I am not a man who incurs debts. How foolish a leader must be to incur and live in debt!

I always tell myself that I will not be surpassed by youngsters. Even now, I go on the boat daily. I am doing this because I know that those who have an interest in the sea will have unlimited economic power in America in the future.

I am doing this in order to liberate the spirits of those who died at sea. I sometimes take the boat out even after being warned of a storm. That is because I know of the many spirit people who died that way.

In 1975, I went to Cape Cod to liberate spirit people from resentment there.

I launched a liberation movement. No one in the world knows this. Why do I do such things while being persecuted? I do it to liberate the spirit world from resentment. (93-96, 1977.5.15)

1.6. Unification of the spirit world

The physical world is Satan's sphere of activity while the spirit world is that of God. The two are constantly at cross-purposes. It is an undeniable fact that this has been an essential contributor to resentment in the age of the providence of restoration. They must not be at cross-purposes. The God-centered sphere of the mind and the sphere of the body governed by Him must be prepared. This standard for the unified foundation will be established according to how it is developed within the domain of daily life. (45-211, 1971.7.1)

For the Unification Church to bring about unification, it must do so from the spirit world. Do you all know the spirit world? Unification Church members must know about it. You must unify it. Do you think that will be easy? Without the unification of the spirit world there will be no unification of the physical world.

Are not the struggles of today's earthly world truly difficult? They are. Yet the struggles of the spirit world are even more difficult. With this in mind, Unification Church members cannot open their mouths to say, "It's difficult." (153-53, 1963.10.18)

In the process of seeking the ideal, what unifies the spiritual and the physical? Since the spiritual dimension is the spirit world and the physical dimension is the earthly world, the two must change places to become one. Just holding onto what is yours will not accomplish this. Only when you give everything will the other side come to you, and only when the other side gives everything to you will you go to the other side. You are going to the position that was lost. (147-94, 1986.8.31)

In order to connect the spiritual and physical worlds in the future, first we must be conscious of our global beliefs and unifying ideology. Then we willingly go the path of suffering in order to make a global breakthrough. When we do this, the spiritual and physical worlds will automatically become one. Unification will start to take place from there, and the direction of its path will be determined. (29-284, 1970.3.11)

Can the Unification Church unify the physical world before the spirit world? It cannot. That's the rule. In order to unify the spirit world, I drove the Unification Church members on earth into the jaws of death and mercilessly pushed them.

When that happens, the spirit world cannot but help you. The further you go in a miserable situation, the more the spirit world stands together in its own way to deal with that.

When you enter a deep place, the realm of heaven will emerge from the midst of this race of thirty million. This

realm also includes those who went to hell long ago. (49-108, 1971.10.9)

Section 2. The Relationship Between People on Earth and the Spirits

2.1. People on earth and the spirits

This world is the devil's world. We must recover it. You do not know when you will die, do you? Everyone dies. If we do not lay the foundation on earth to surmount and go back and forth over the peak of death, God's Kingdom on earth will not be created. Without that, His kingdom in heaven will not be established. We must make it possible to come back to the earth at will after going to the spirit world. Only then will we live in God's Kingdom on earth and establish and live in His kingdom in heaven.

After going to the spirit world, we must be able to freely return. Without realizing God's Kingdom on earth, we cannot return freely. This is not a wild fantasy. That's how it is. We must make an effort to make this possible for eternity. All our ancestors have failed to fulfill their portions of responsibility and indemnity conditions, and so were unable to find their way in the spirit world and descent to earth to pay indemnity. Likewise, you must not repeat the same failures. You will be caught by this fact since Principle is true. (146-223, 1986.7.1)

There is a wall between the way religions must go and the way the ordinary world must go. How can unbelievers

harmonize themselves with believers, and how can believers make harmony among themselves in the age at the end of the century? Without resolving this problem, humankind will be divided in two and become unable to enter a new unified world.

If these two factions were to enter one world, that would result in a divided world, and this cannot be the ideal of the absolute God. I consider that since the ideal world of God can only be one, the two divisions cannot both enter there. The way to solve this problem cannot be found in complicated global affairs. The problem is how one can discover the self that will unify the mind and body and leap toward the goal.

Starting from the idea that religious and world unity must come from myself, the question of what the Unification Church is trying to do today comes to the forefront. It is not a religion just for the sake of religion. It should achieve solidarity with the world, finding ways that religious activity can be accompanied by social activity; it should find ways the world is seeking the religious path and bring the two into oneness. A big wall lies across here blocking religion and society from becoming one – for individuals, families, peoples, nations, the world, and even the cosmos.

Where do we start from to demolish this wall? Where did the trouble start? Not from the end of the world, but from the individual. Because individuals got out of order, mind and body came apart and pursued their own separate purposes in different directions. What is the

issue here? It is how to merge, weave, combine, and melt different purposes into one, and then how to reintegrate mind and body.

Since God and Satan exist, they are at work. Until now, God has been guiding the providence of restoration and the providence of seeking truth to save humankind. Contrary to this, Satan is opposing God's providence. On the side of goodness and after setting one ideal world in the direction of His providence, God is driving toward that purpose, distinguishing daily between right and wrong. On the other hand, the evil god Satan is twisting humankind in the opposite direction while telling them not to go that way.

At each border and wall, God is twisting people's arms and saying, "Don't go over the wall. Turn right!" and Satan is also twisting their arms and saying, "Turn left!" This is how we are being divided. Our movement to go right resulted in the right wing, and the result of moving leftward globally is the left wing. Now we are faced with the historical age at the end of the century having right and left wings. This is the visible result of the struggle between mind and body.

Then, the question is how to create oneness. By uniting the world, the nation, the tribe and the family, does the individual become united? No. It must start from an individual.

So, setting aside the world, we must create a movement which can bring about unity within the individuals. A movement that can connect the pres-

ent day real world to religion, and connect religion to the real world, thereby, becoming individuals that both sides can accept.

The problem here, however, is that evil spirits are dominating the body. Evil spirits are rooted in the body and good spirits in the mind. From this comes the division of materialism and idealism. The things that people talk about in this world do not just spring up like that. As the time approaches, sinners should confess their sins. They should come clean about who they are.

Whether we achieve unity on earth is decided by the testimonies of the good and evil spirits on the global level. Good and evil spirits are fighting on that level. Although we cannot observe it or feel that, we are a part of that. (140-15, 1986.2.1)

2.2. The position of people in the spirit world

Today, there are four billion people living on earth, but in the spirit world there are hundreds of billions of souls. The question is how this world and the spirit world, which we consider the subject, are connected. Are they connected through what we consider valuable on earth, such as material, knowledge or position? That cannot be it.

That is because the spirit world is a world that transcends the material world. It transcends the world of knowledge. Since it transcends time and space, it is a world where yesterday's joy can become today's, and today's joy can become tomorrow's.

In this light, that essential world does not move based on the things that we who live on earth today need or value. What is important is: what is the center of everything of value within life in the spirit world?

Each soul in the spirit world belongs to its own society. Just like on earth, the spirit realm also has families, tribes, nations and a world.

The spirit world is the place where everyone now living on earth, whether they like it or not, will go and live. From the uncivilized to the civilized, all sorts of groups of people who came and went throughout history will be congregating there.

If, up until now, human history failed to become one based on peace, happiness and the ideal, then what is going to happen to the people in the spirit world? How will they be ruled? People who lived on earth cannot suddenly change in the spirit world. Is there not a saying, "A habit formed when you are three continues until you turn eighty"? It is difficult to correct your inner nature.

In this regard, is there anything particularly different about the people in the spirit world compared to people living on the earth today? Would they suddenly become different? That is not possible. You are harvested with the exact same form in which you lived in this world. All the people in the spirit world are, after all, just people who have lived on earth. From that perspective, the spirit world is no different from the world that people live in today. (141-267, 1986.3.2)

The spirit world has so many types of workers. Yet they cannot come to earth and carry out their work at will. They cannot carry out their work to this extent. They are blocked from doing so.

Unless a bridge is built through religion, only special people can return. For instance, factions were created within Judaism, and when they descend from the spirit world, the mainstream will not be in a straight line. When different lineages of Judaism offer devotions, the mainstream changes back and forth.

Hence, in terms of descending from the spirit world, only those connected with the straight line can descend. They cannot cooperate with each other in the process of returning resurrection. People on earth go to the spirit world within a century. Once in the spirit world, if they want to come back to the next generation, they have to follow the same principle, yet only special ones will be able to do so.

The walls in the spirit world will increase bit by bit. It will get more and more complicated. The next generation will all go to the spirit world. Thus, these walls gradually get bigger. These are all walls.

It is now a global age. Imagine how complicated it must be! Think how many times you must turn around and around in order to find the path. So when the time comes, the walls must be broken down. Our intention is to create paths descending from and entering into the spirit world. The Unification Church will do this work. (102-29, 1978.11.19)

Those who have previously gone to the spirit world are all divided. They do not communicate horizontally, but to some extent they do communicate vertically. (218-124, 1991.7.14)

2.3. Spirits outnumber people on earth

Do you all know how big the spirit world is? Have you ever imagined how big its population would be? Some spiritualists have calculated there are some 3,320 spirits attached to each earthly person. Consider if this number were on our side, would we be defeated by the world or would we conquer it?

Do those spirits fear atomic bombs? Likewise, if you do not fear bullets, atomic bombs or the nation, you will never be defeated. You will surely be victorious. You must go beyond this. Although you are objecting, I will make you go and follow you, after locking the door. I will pretend to be the owner, and I will lock the door once all have gone past me. With these thoughts I have been fighting until now. (86-192, 1976.3.28)

2.4. Wandering spirits

Those who deny God are more pitiful than people who are starving to death. The latter will be granted a certain level in the other world according to the merits of their good faith, but atheists will have no foothold because they deny the spirit world. They drift about in the spirit world like a mass of clouds. They become wandering spirits. Just as clouds gather

and produce rain, they congregate and exert an evil influence. They all go to hell and inflict pain there. Although I know this all too clearly, I must save them, and this is why I am doing this work.

It is a serious problem that people are dying. Sixty thousand now die each day. Twenty million are dying of hunger annually means sixty thousand per day. When the parents, siblings and children of the dying see them, the lamentable heart-wrenching story unfolds. If those who are known as the True Parents do not feel compassion and make the relevant preparations, the fact that they were contemporaries of those people starving on earth will become a source of resentment.

With this in mind, I have been preparing a way to solve the problem of world hunger through ocean-based projects. Even if this means doubling and tripling our hardship, I have given global publicity and prepared a path to enable the Unification Church to offer its help by staying closest to the problem. That is why we created the Washington Television Center. We will launch a fundraising campaign for this.

Considering that people do not live over a hundred years, out of five billion people, fifty million go to the spirit world annually. What can we do for those going to hell? God wants us to harvest for His side what Satan has sown. What will happen, the more this is delayed? During the past forty years, how many have gone to hell? Billions. This is serious. When I go to the spirit world, if they say, "While you were alive on earth, you

did not fulfill your responsibility for us, did you?” Then how am I supposed to reply to them? We should at least think about this. When I talk to the members, I share these thoughts and express my determination to take responsibility for the future. They will say, “You are an amazing person. You cared for us.” (205-355, 1990.10.2)

2.5. Discerning spirits by the mind

No ordinary people in the world know the taste of water that you drink after returning from having gone out and spoken with a serious heart while shedding sweat. How does it taste? It cannot even be compared to cola or honeyed water. It tastes different each time you drink it.

We must also discover such things; otherwise, we cannot develop extra-sensory perception. You would not be able to respond to anything in relation to the spirit world. If you come to feel such things, your ears will become very sensitive and upon hearing something from a distance, you will already have analyzed the content of that sound. Even with closed eyes, you will be able to perceive who is passing by and whether they are good or bad people. You will become spiritually perceptive. Without understanding this, you cannot discern between good and evil spirits. You know not by seeing but through the mind. The mind's eyes are at a higher level than your physical eyes.

I am telling you this because you have a long way ahead. You should know

this. Do not become overly self-confident. This is why it is stated in the Bible, “Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven.” It is the same principle. It all connects together. (96-169, 1978.1.3)

2.6. The value of life on earth

We know that for thousands of years, countless people have been accusing Adam and Eve. Now you are becoming new ancestors.

Will you be ancestors who will be accused by your descendants, or ancestors of blessing who will be glorified? You are standing at these crossroads. Adam and Eve are accused because they failed to stand in the public position. Surely they would be free from accusation today had they followed a sacrificial and more public path.

You must know that you are standing in such a similar situation. As such, you should always be thinking that you are representing three ages. For this reason, you have to realize that the spirit world is in your hands and that your ancestors are at your mercy. If we gather the past, present and future together, put physical and spiritual realms together, and lead them, they will come running to you. We must accomplish that mission.

The spirit world, your relatives, also your country, and even the task of setting the right tradition for your descendants are all in your hands. You should always keep this in mind. Whether you, as a single person, do well or not will determine whether your ancestors and

relatives can be liberated and whether your descendants can be the chosen people of liberation. (66-75, 1973.3.17)

God has been trying to hit the target over six thousand years without success; after trying for tens of thousands of years, He finally hit it. When you think about it, the time of that hit was when He felt most sleepy and utterly exhausted. Would He doze off or stay powerless at that moment? When He was so exhausted and sleepy, He pulled Himself together and shot again with a clear mind. After he made His shot, would He collapse with fatigue and drowsiness? Forgetting His dignity, He would exclaim “Wow!” with joy.

How dumbfounded the spirit world must be! From the perspective of the angels, how dumbfounded they must be, saying, “Oh, the archangel’s mistake put God in trouble, and now....” For tens of thousands of years the spirit world has been wishing for the target to be hit. Now it has actually been struck. What will the spirit world feel?

If there were such a wonderful place, would people all over the world try to come in or not, even if the entrance fee might be ten thousand dollars? Suppose all kinds of people came and then left, complaining, “My goodness, I’ve lost out on this ticket!” but then later a certain beggar in that neighborhood bought a ticket with the money he begged for and received, and he entered and witnessed God striking the target. What would the beggar do? Would he start dancing there or not?

Then God would get excited and start boasting about it. Wouldn’t He say, “Oh, I hit it, I hit it! Is no one around?” But then, if He saw this beggar at that moment, do you think He would shout, “You wretched beggar!”? He would instead start dancing and saying, “This is great!” (103-86, 1979.2.4)

Section 3. Our Ancestors and Ourselves

3.1. Ancestors are looking upon us

When you go to the spirit world, will your ancestors come to you or not? They will say, “Wow, our descendants joined the Unification Church and met Rev. Moon!” From that point on, the palace and Royal Family of heaven will start. Until now, there has been no palace in heaven.

Between the grandson who obtusely does what I say and the granddaughter who tries to be smart and according to her own thoughts evades me imperceptibly like an eel, who will the ancestors praise? Will they praise the granddaughter who acts like a rabbit or the grandson who acts like a turtle? They will praise the one who acts like a turtle.

Rabbits urinate often. I do not know about turtles. I have not seen them urinate. Rabbits urinate after hopping a short while and do it again after a short while. Why? They are marking their territory to stop other rabbits from encroaching. So we should be like turtles. Those who do as they are told and who move on forgetting about whether

it is day or night, oblivious to the passage of time and the seasons, will be welcomed everywhere. All your ancestors in the other world are watching the way you live. There is nowhere to hide. They see everything. When you go to the spirit world, you will be able to pass through walls and even the entire earth.

We must go and live in such a world eternally. Since we were created as God's objects of love, He needs beings who become object partners to His eternal love forever. Just as He is eternal, we are eternal. Without becoming partners of love, we have no eternal life.

In the other world, who goes to the highest place? Those who wish it were possible to be born again as people who serve humanity as God does. Those who empathize with Him and comfort Him eternally get closest to Him: they are those who try to use whatever good things they have for the sake of humanity.

When grandparents approach their dying day, do they not pass on all good things to their children? Just as grandparents hand down to their descendants the fruits of their labors, with that kind of heart we should live in a way that enables us to say we will bequeath something to humanity. (213-196, 1991.1.20)

3.2. We should surpass our ancestors

When you leave behind a love greater than that of your grandparents and great-grandparents in the house where your ancestors had lived, in the room

where your grandfather, your father and you were born, heaven will see the luster of love shining forth. Hundreds, thousands and millions of volts of light will shine forth. If you wonder where the shining light goes, it ascends from your hometown to generations of your ancestors.

When you go to the spirit world, you arrive at the Kingdom of Heaven centering on God. This kingdom is our original homeland. Is not God our original Father?

Adam and Eve are God's incarnations. Since they are horizontal parents with God as the vertical Parent, when people discard their horizontal bodies and vertically return to their hometowns, they live attending God, the eternal king. Who is the king?

Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have become monarchs of love who, by perfecting themselves as God's incarnations would fulfill their portions of responsibility, connecting the realms of direct and indirect dominion on earth through God's love. Then God would live in the hearts of Adam and Eve, and the spirits of Adam and Eve would become God's body. They would become one body. Together, they would share and breathe divine and human love eternally.

Hence, we must receive God's love; and next, strive to practice love closer to the essential love than that of the ancestors Adam and Eve. This is the eternal path you walk in the spirit world, seeking after truth. (213-190, 1991.1.20)

3.3. We should also visit our ancestral graves

If your grandparents are deceased, you should visit their graves with the feeling that God is buried there. From now on, when they die, you are to mourn and wail bitterly. You should atone for the resentment you caused by not having served your grandparents well during your lifetime.

You should offer devotion until God hears your cry and recognizes you and until your grandfather sends a message that it is now okay. At harvest time, you should not forget your grandparents. You should visit and serve them earnestly in each of the four seasons. Then they will commend you and say that although they mistakenly thought that you had become a departed soul or baby goblin of the Unification Church, you had actually become a royal grandchild.

You should serve your parents better than any king was served by his parents. Do you not wish that your parents were king and queen? Your heart's desire is for your parents to be higher than God and a king, and for you to be permitted to serve them as such. You should live with the qualifications of royal children who can make their mother and father happier than any kings of this world, even if you had to abide by palace protocol.

Then your parents cannot help but praise you whenever they open their mouths. Since your ancestors in heaven and your descendants will all praise you, the realm of unification will develop centered on attending all those parents and

grandparents. The realms of unification for grandchildren, parents, children of filial piety will determine the one mainstream all generations in the future. The seed of unification can be sown on this foundation. Once you have this, you will go forward, dreaming. (220-349, 1991.10.20)

Since the birthright of the firstborn has now been restored, all our ancestors for three generations – grandfather, father and elder brother – will submit themselves before the positions of the firstborn, the parents and the king to attend their grandson as their ancestor and grandfather. As this great upheaval of heaven and earth and 180-degree inversion takes place, in which a child is attended as a parent and a younger brother is attended as an elder brother, a similar action takes place in hell, changing its direction so that it can move toward heaven.

Thus, we must return to our hometowns and restore 160 families. In your hometowns, you should have people listen to the Word, traveling back and forth. When the eldest grandson by the eldest son, who is the root of the lineage, recommends it then all the collateral descendants should follow. So gather all the 160 families and hold a feast with a Unification Church declaration ceremony. They should pledge absolute obedience to the orders of God's princes and princesses, assemble at the ancestral burial ground in front of the ancestral grave, and attend them like a king being enthroned.

You must be able to say, "Through

the True Parents we have become ancestors who can bequeath a new lineage and become a blessed tribe that affects the realm of liberation! Our tribe will be of God's eternal unchanging household and kinship!" When that happens, you will bid farewell to Satan completely.

The Unification Church allows the honoring of ancestors. Did Christianity allow you to perform a memorial service for the repose of your ancestors? The Unification Church should carry on and establish this tradition. This is not a secular tradition. This becomes the royal domain for eternally serving the traditional blood relatives in the realm of tribal messiahs who are succeeding in the genealogical generations by serving the heavenly Parent, the heavenly kingdom and the heavenly ancestors. It will be a nation where we can attend the king and sing praises for the eternal reign of peace. Do you understand? You, your mother, father, family and tribe can go directly to heaven only after having lived in such a nation. (220-221, 1991.10.19)

3.4. Ancestors we can meet in the spirit world

You must know what your house is like. It is a representative house for all the houses that people inhabit while living on earth. Not only that, it even represents the spirit world. You can live in that house. Those who have lived in this way can naturally and automatically go to the realm of the original homeland, their hometown. There will be no conflict when meeting grandparents or any-

one else.

When you go to the other world, thousands of generations of your ancestors will all be gathered there. There will be some of them who ended up in hell. Some generations of your ancestors went to hell, while others went to different places. They are staying at different levels. Those who lived serving others go to heaven. So you can be an example of the saying, "All is well if there is harmony in the family." If you live for the sake of your family and take care of your grandparents just three times, they will realize that they were in the wrong.

How many times, through miracles and mighty works, did Moses try to serve in Egypt? Several times – seven, ten, even more than twelve times he tried to serve. When you try to serve and yet they do not receive you, then God will guide you. What you have officially invested in one place through serving others, He will bring to fruition in other places. So, among the people of faith living on earth within the satanic world, those who served God on earth will live well in His original homeland, even though they had been persecuted and opposed on earth, just as the Israelites became the chosen people and entered Canaan after passing through the wilderness.

So, have you served white-haired grandmothers well? God is white. Snow gathers in high mountains, right? God is clean. So the brain knows all this. Also, did these grandmothers serve their own mothers-in-law and grandmothers-in-law? They must serve their mothers-in-

law and grandmothers-in-law in such a way that their dying words will be, “I will go ahead and prepare to receive you in the other world just as you have served me.” (213-182, 1991.1.20)

Section 4. New Spiritual Age

4.1. The coming of the age of extrasensory perception

It is not as if the spirit world ceases to exist when you cross over just one peak. In the future, the age of extrasensory perception will come, and then there will be no one who cannot communicate with the spirit world. The time of people and spirits attacking the earth is over. Now Satan and evil spirits are attacking, but there will come a time when good spirits will attack. I am doing this in order to pave the way for that.

Regarding the attitude of parents toward their children, it is good for there to be parents present and caring for their children with loving hearts and from a loving position.

This path can not be avoided no matter who may reject it. The path of death is unavoidable. What if you have to go the way alone? Where would you go if a desolate spirit world were to open up for you? Where do stateless people go? It might be a most fearful world. Both Satan and the angels will come there.

When you open your eyes suddenly after you have died, you will realize the spirit world exists. But then what would you do if Satan were to drag you away? Satan might leap at you, saying, “Hey

you! Stand at the head of the line!” Such things could happen. If you think about this, can you sleep at night? This is an inevitable course.

I’m serious about such things. What will happen after death? When I go to the spirit world, such and such people will come to me. I have made all the arrangements. I know all the secrets of Confucius, Buddha and Jesus.

I even asked Jesus, “Did you not die because of such and such?” and he replied, “Yes, I did. How did you, the leader of the Unification Church know all that?” By knowing such things, it is even possible for me to become a friend of Jesus.

You or Christians may call Jesus, “Lord! Lord!” but I do not. We are friends. They call me a heretic for saying such things, but you will find out who is the heretic when you go over there. You should prepare the ground for all these things before you go.

I’m doing this because I know very well that when I go to the spirit world, there will be a big commotion. If you cannot believe this, pray and find out for yourselves. This is the threat of the Unification Church. If you prayed and found out that you were wrong, what would you do? That is what happens because all such preparations have been made.

That is why I am following this way, although it is difficult. How about you? Where will you go? Are you ready? When you are dying, if you say to me, “Oh Teacher, please help me, as I am dying and going to the spirit world,”

nothing can be done by then. Preparations cannot be made then, but only while on earth. (61-327, 1972.9.3)

4.2. Entering a new age through the declaration of the Day of the Victory of Heaven

Jesus is formation stage, the twelve apostles are growth stage, and the seventy-two disciples are the completion stage; these are the three stages. If you cannot do this, you can not go to heaven. Originally, you receive the Blessing after doing this. Then Jesus also gets married.

When your entire family comes to believe, with all three generations, grandparents, children and grandchildren, taking charge of this and that, then they can function as three generations. When this happens, by restoring your parents you can immediately restore your ancestors from myriads of generations.

The age is coming when the spirit world can return to the earth. The organization on earth also forms the organization in the spirit world, and they become one. As such amazing phenomena occur imagine how overjoyed the spirit world will be!

Hence, the age of victory of religion and of the spirit world has come. (96-250, 1978.1.22)

Now pray, "In accordance with True Father's words, on this Day of the Victory of Heaven, October 4 (1976), you good spirits please return and lead your evil

descendants on earth to heaven through your virtuous embrace." An age is coming when such commands will be made possible. Since we live within the domain of the age of Adam, and spirits live in the domain of angels, due to the principle and law that angels must assist Adam, we quickly come to the conclusion that they would be compelled to help. (89-113, 1976.10.4)

The spiritual and mental world is basically a realm of unification. If you say, "I would like to see so-and-so," and wait for twenty-four hours, that person comes. This happens. When you focus, he appears. This is like sending out radio signals.

Then, because he has a mind that works like a receiver, for no reason at all, he becomes curious about you and feels a desire to come. (76-142, 1975.2.2)

4.3. Unification Ceremony and spiritual assistance

What is the significance of True Parents' birthday (sixth day of the lunar New Year)? After returning this time (1976), on the first day of the second month of the lunar calendar, I conducted what is called the Unification Ceremony. You may not know what this ceremony is.

In the course of restoration, you must perfect the individual, family, tribe, nation and world and connect them in a straight line.

On earth, I had accomplished things on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation, but they were

not yet connected to the spirit world. Nor were they connected to the families of the Unification Church. Although the road was paved, it had to be connected with the spirit world and then to the physical world. Only then could the Unification Ceremony take place.

When could the Unification Ceremony take place? Since Christianity has been developing globally mainly through democratic countries, unification is possible only when there is a global foundation. Without such a foundation, unification at one level cannot be connected to other levels. Until then, we could only aim at the global level from the national level, but we could not determine and fix it.

But now, through the foundation I made in America, we can make the connection. Now is the time when the nation and world are connected. When this spiritual standard can be connected to the global foundation, based on such a global standard, it can be connected to the spirit world for the first time.

In the spirit world, Korean and Japanese spirits are not well connected. Spirits of different nationalities were connected only to their own countries, so we could not mobilize them all as a unified force toward one global path. Until this is resolved on earth, the spirit world cannot be organized.

Thus, in the spirit world, Japanese and Koreans, Japanese and Chinese are all enemies to each other. There is so much animosity between nations in the spirit world. Since those enemy spirits are against each other, they have to get

connected.

Thus, I conducted the Ceremony for Total Liberation from Resentment on March 1, 1975, a ceremony to liberate and forgive everyone. This opens the way to liberate even Satan. Through this ceremony, enemies can no longer treat each other as enemies but must forgive one another. To me, Satan is my enemy and when I forgive him he is no longer an enemy, since God does not consider him an enemy either.

Now is the time for unification. What will happen when the physical and spirit worlds become one? Was not the Fall the separation of those two worlds? Did God not get separated from Adam and Eve? Wasn't there a breach of heart between Adam and Eve? Hence, with the spiritual and physical worlds unified, if an interracial structure develops based on Adam and Eve's family, tribe, people, nation, and world, this can create the global realm of unification. These things must be resolved; but it is not possible in the USA. It cannot be done there.

Since I established the individual, family, tribal, ethnic and national foundations centering on Korea, and advanced to the world, and because Korea is the central nation, I hurried to get here. After the Unification Ceremony, I realized that my birthday this year is historic, because the people in the spirit world never before had a chance to attend the True Parents' birthday from a unified position, nor were they qualified to celebrate it. Also, all their descendants on earth did not have the privilege to celebrate the True Parents' birthday.

It was because the spiritual and physical foundations were not unified.

Now, however, with such privilege being provided spiritually and physically, the spirit world moves to restore descendants. From the standpoint of the Principle, the ancestors are in the archangel's position and their descendants in Adam's position. That is because the archangel assisted in the creation of Adam. With the unification of the ancestors in the spirit world, a foundation was created enabling them to assist in the re-creation of Adam on earth. Therefore, logic leads us to the conclusion that we have entered the time in which our ancestors can intervene in our affairs.

For this reason, this day, when the True Parents come to Korea to celebrate their birthday, is a day when they open another historic epoch. In other words, countless spirits in the other world now have the privilege to participate in this celebration. Through this, even their descendants on earth who still do not know about the Unification Church can be re-created.

We have now entered the age in which the ancestors assist their descendants and mobilize their descendants to begin the re-creation of the earthly people who stand in a similar position to Adam. This is just like when God created Adam with the archangel's assistance.

Based on this logic, all the people of the whole world can receive the privilege to celebrate the True Parents' birthday.

(83-109, 1976.2.5)

4.4. Ceremony of One Heart and ancestral assistance

I have become the head of the Moon clan, not through coercion but through their own desire to attend me. That has come to pass. Do you think I knew this organization existed before? I met it for the first time. Through this meeting, clan heads got together and presented me as the one parent of Korea. In order to accomplish such a thing, this ceremony is essential.

The position of the True Parents spoken of in the Unification Church is not just for Koreans but was originally for all humankind and the ancestors who went before us. All ancestors should have gone to the spirit world as the True Parents' relatives, but this collapsed due to the Fall. Since the earth is in Abel's position, by following Abels as they went the way of restoring the birthright of the firstborn, the spirit world could be liberated.

Since the physical world has restored the birthright of the firstborn, the time has come for the spirit world to support our endeavors. So be strong and courageous. At this hour, I am determining and proclaiming this ceremony as the Ceremony of One Heart.

You are not sure about the reality of the spirit world, are you? Your good ancestors are making full preparations to help us, through the heads of clan associations. This is connected to the earth like 'X' is to 'Y'. The fallen world, the earth and the spirit world have had different points of view. If the spir-

it world tries to go one way, the earth opposes it. How can this be overcome? Through true love. (190-314, 1989.6.23)

Section 5. Returning Resurrection and the Assistance of Spirits

5.1. Position of our predecessors in the spirit world

Those who, in the course of their lives, experience the heart of God, who is guiding the providence amidst historical sorrow, cannot behold Him without tears, wherever they may be. Being in such a position, they understand God's will and struggle to become His children. When He finds such kindred spirits, God will come to that place and shed tears.

God's sorrow is embedded within us, and at the same time, within this nation, world and within all things. We should liquidate this sorrow and develop a movement to restore His joy. Experiencing God's sorrow is central to our life.

The question is whether we have set the standard to mobilize the people in the spirit world, who are unknown to earthly people, to testify to us. The spirit world is also requiring such things. Since the spirit world knows God's heart, if such people on earth appeal to them, spirit people will be mobilized to help with the work on earth of actualizing the ideal of the heavenly kingdom. Spirit people cannot come to earth because it has become a realm of complaint (4-60, 1958.3.2)

The place where you are standing is not where Adam of old fell. It is beyond that hill. In other words, now is the time when Adam can converse with God directly and go straight toward one purpose directly.

From this point of view, the histories before and after the third seven-year course will be entirely different. In this course, the forces of evil must descend and the forces of good will ascend. Because of this, it is the time when the spiritual and physical worlds intersect.

In the spirit world, there are evil, middle-level and good spirits. They stay at the three stages of formation, growth and completion. By being linked to the third seven-year course, the good spirits will have a path enabling them to contact the earth. That is inevitable. Since the formation and growth stages lie within Satan's dominion, the evil spirits within the dominion of the forces of evil have played a leading role, and evil people have dominated the entire world. From now on, the spirits will begin to cross over to the earth.

The spirit world descends at this time of intersection, with the evil spirits descending first. This time of intersection is the time of transcending the middle spirit world and crossing over into the good spirit world. On this day of crossing over, the good spirits and the good people will ascend while the evil spirits and the evil people will descend. Up until now, good and evil were in a muddle, crisscrossing over each other while ascending and descending. But from now on, I see us entering a new-

dimensional age, in which good and evil can be completely separated. (75-193, 1975.1.5)

When you arrive in the spirit world, you will see some great New Testament martyrs honored and who were supposedly in a lofty place dwelling in the most miserable place. Those who die thinking that their death will bring them to heaven cannot go there. The attitude of people who die like that is like that of someone who became insane and committed suicide for heaven. Yet those who suffered and sacrificed even though they were not martyred, believing that their sacrifice would create heaven in their nation, and who helped countless other people go to heaven, turn out to be the ones who end up in lofty places there.

We must root out and rectify the essence of faith. Christianity caused much trouble by teaching such ideas. Unification Thought has to get rid of these problems. Even if we do not destroy it, it is destined to perish. Yet why must we destroy it quickly? Because if it perishes on its own, it will be abandoned by God. So we must destroy it and redeem it. (64-108, 1972.10.29)

Among your ancestors, many have gone to hell. We must liberate them all. The parents must go this way, and you have been placed on the path to follow them. Accordingly, you are destined to follow this path all the way to the end.

Then the spirit world will help us through the individual, family, tribal and ethnic levels, carrying on the for-

tune for unification. Once the world is unified, the spirit world will automatically unite. The people in the spirit world are descending to the earth, yet evil spirits have been descending before the good ones do. This is why the phenomenon of neurosis is occurring among people on earth. You did not know this, but now evil spirits have all descended upon the earth and invaded the human world.

With the coming of the age of ideological confusion based on the democratic and communist worlds, evil spirits descend from the spirit world and cause spiritual and physical chaos. When good spirits descend to earth, however, they spread out around the evil spirits. Having descended upon the earth, they disperse the evil spirits and occupy the land these evil spirits had been occupying.

When good spirits occupy the earth, there is no place for evil spirits to go. So they will begin to surrender. When Satan comes to the earth and surrenders, evil spirits will also be restored. So in the Last Days, we must even restore Satan. (54-226, 1972.3.24)

5.2. Spirit world mobilization and assistance

You must witness even when it does not go well. It is like throwing stones into the sea. You keep on doing it and do not stop until the stones fill the sea and form a mountain. Through this, your heart grows. Even if your body remains unchanging, your heart grows.

Get up at dawn and pray with tears for your neighborhood and your mis-

sion area. This is the way of the heart and the way of establishing a spiritual bond with the spirit world. You should feel that if God were to look down upon this neighborhood, He could not help but shed tears because they are all destined for hell, and you would feel like shedding tears yourself in His place, in empathy with Him. When the force of sympathy enters you, enabling you to shed tears based on God's heart, the entire spirit world will be mobilized.

As human beings, you should be moved to tears in God's presence. Inspire Him to be grateful to you and able to shed tears, saying that although you are the descendants of fallen Adam and Eve, you are better than them. Otherwise you cannot communicate with the spirit world. Only when God is moved to tears and says, "As the descendants of fallen Adam and Eve, and as the descendants of traitors, how can you be like this!" Only then will the spirit world come to your assistance. The spirit world opens from there. Anything below that standard will never work. This is the Principle. (96-280, 1978.2.13)

Would you all like to go to the spirit world? Which is more sincere: your desire to go to the spirit world or the desire of spirit people to return to earth? From the perspective of the Principle, should you or the spirit world be more passionate? The spirit world is the realm of the archangel, and here on earth is the realm of Adam and Eve, the realm of the children. Should not the children be more passionate than the servant, rather

than the other way around?

Are you supposed to help the spirit world or is the spirit world supposed to help you? The spirits are waiting to come to help, but why are they waiting? Would they help you to build God's Kingdom on earth or to eat well and live in comfort? They would help to build the kingdom on earth. (161-226, 1987.2.15)

The spirit world must be mobilized. How can heaven be formed without mobilizing the spirit world? It cannot. Heaven is supposed to begin from the True Parents, not the fallen descendants who have existed until now. Just as the angelic world helped when Adam was created, the spirit world should return to earth and help in the re-creation. Without doing so, it is not possible to build heaven on earth. Is that not the Principle? Is this not the Principle of Resurrection? It will be recognized as true when it appears as real and unchanging. (162-114, 1987.3.30)

I make your life hard and make you suffer not because I hate you, but to save you. You should realize that all this is for the sake of saving you. You must understand and be grateful that your suffering is for your own salvation. Then the world of heavenly heart, the new world of heart, will unfold before you. This is the order of things. So once you possess the bonds of the heart, you can fly anywhere, day or night, according to the heavenly command. If you are determined to take responsibility and lead the world like a locomotive, the spirit world

will help you. If you think like this, it will surely help you. (96-278, 1978.2.13)

If you keep pace with the Unification Church by way of the principled standard, good spirits and ancestors in the spirit world who used to cooperate with the national fortune will work for you. Externally, you may appear unlucky with a flat face and small ears, but the spirit world sees you as a lucky child. Your ancestors within ten generations are anxious because the history of restoration is realized based on ten generations. Yet when an evil descendant appears, ancestors within ten generations judge him by saying, “Hey you! You are going to ruin us!”

For this reason, those who have good ancestors will be actively supported by them. You all are standing in such a position. The spirit world will be eternally happy if you, who are in such a position, fight with excitement and style and win every battle wherever you go. Various evil spirits will fall back with surprise even before they show up. So these ancestors will attend you like a king.

We must prepare a victorious foundation before God’s will with the heart that refuses to defile God’s tradition and dignity. You must pray about what kind of tradition you will establish. Now is a blessed time. (14-19, 1964.4.19)

5.3. The spirit world and ancestors

When I look at people’s faces, I immediately know whether they have good or bad ancestors. Some people have good

ancestors and receive blessings. Others have bad ancestors and suffer unbearably. Such people suffer unbearable hardships even when they go witnessing in their mission areas. (37-144, 1970.12.23)

When your character has a certain shortcoming, then listen to the kind of testimony that can supplement it. Listen to those testimonies and absorb them to enhance your character. That is why you must listen to many testimonies about other people’s personal experiences. When you listen, do not criticize them.

Criticizing means deciding between Satan’s side and God’s side. When you criticize, you end up on one of two sides: Satan’s or God’s. Therefore, criticizing can be a cancer in your development. Once you are on Satan’s side, you cannot just go to God’s side, and once you are on God’s side, you cannot go over to Satan’s side. In our life, we do not just go in a straight line but zigzag.

We are the conduits for not only good ancestors but also evil ones. In terms of our disposition, when we have many character traits from our good ancestors we go the way of goodness. But a part of us also comes from our evil ancestors. A time will come during your lives when you will surely behave in an evil way. If you criticize, it will bring trouble. Hence, the words “do not judge others” make sense. (76-139, 1975.2.2)

If you possess true love, you can join God’s party anytime. You will see thousands of ancestors and spirits because of being able to transcend time and space.

Only those who have the heart of true love can manage and transcend all this. The only way to obtain the privilege of receiving the rights of inheritance from God is through love. If people of true love were to push past me, I would be very happy and would not react against them. Everyone would welcome them. Since the other world is like that, you must be trained here.

I am teaching these things to create people who can go to God's world, breathe there and be synchronized with it. Then you must be able to dance to the beat. Am I not also going to the spirit world soon? Satan cannot follow me there. (147-115, 1986.8.31)

We must become one by receiving God's true spirit. Since people were born from the origin, we must begin from the original subject and maintain the standard of moving the body through this process. Then we can achieve complete integration. Otherwise, we end up with an imperfect integration.

Unification Church members are moving within a living reality with a clear background, because when they try going their own way the spirit world stops them and helps them put things in order through spiritual revelations. This is an amazing thing. Therefore, when you look at a Unification Church member, you will see that his body is centered on the spirit and his ancestors are all rooted in him. His good ancestors are all attached to him. They obstruct his body from going toward the evil world and bundle it off quickly toward the good

world. (162-103, 1987.3.30)

If there were true parents, true families, true societies, true nations and a true world that governed everything on earth, how wonderful this world would be! Such a world has not been able to come about.

Why has the world become like this? Because of the Fall. Generally speaking, the world is the way it is because it began with an untrue motivation and existed till now as a fallen world.

If human life just ended in this world, how simple it would be! People live eternally. They are made to live eternally. This is a good thing, but you are in trouble. People are to live forever. You would not know, because you have not had so many spiritual experiences. But those who have spiritual experiences can meet all the ancestors who lived millennia ago, including Adam, in the spirit world. (159-274, 1968.5.19)

When you go to the spirit world, you will meet and chat with countless saints and sages and countless ancestors. They will ask you, "Where did you come from? Where on earth? Which country? Where?" and reminisce as they talk with you. Do not friends also share stories about the past when they meet? When you go to the spirit world you will meet your first grandfather and thousands and myriads of your ancestors. Yet how would you feel if they asked you roughly, "You good-for-nothing, what kind of a life did you lead?" Think about it. (148-320, 1986.10.26)

5.4. The hope of spirit people

If our Unification Church members have a sincere, loving heart to make the True Parents happy at least once in their life, they will be in rhythm with the other world.

What would the people in the spirit world think? Would they not want to bring me something to eat and see me eat it? They are more enthusiastic than you are. It is true. You do not know, but they know everything. They know everything that will happen in the future. You are ignorant, but the other world has clear knowledge and understanding.

The people in the spirit world know clearly how they can devote themselves and serve me. All the five senses feel a stimulating force from me. You have not been able to feel this so far, but now you will be able to feel this when you are connected with me. (207-97, 1990.11.1)

5.5. Returning resurrection and rebirth

5.5.1. Returning resurrection

Just as the good ancestors were able to enter the life-spirit level from the form-spirit level when Jesus came upon the earth, your ancestors, too, have entered the realm which gives them the special privilege to return to earth through the conditions you have made. When you understand this and become victorious branches, you stand in a position of having created life, and consequently, your ancestors will help you. In this way, you

should be the base through which thousands of generations of your good ancestors can return.

The time of Jesus was the era in which the spirit world helped conditionally for the sake of resurrection to the life-spirit level. But now is the era in which they help unconditionally for the sake of resurrection to the divine-spirit level. Since such an era has come, there is no greater blessing. In other words, the spirit world is helping. (14-21, 1964.4.19)

The world has opposed me. How much did the world try to kill me and get rid of the Unification Church? We were able to steer our way through all this because I was not crazy.

I have tied a rope high up with God according to the way of heaven and earth. People tried to grab hold of the rope, but they failed. In the end, this created wars between churches and nations, bringing countries to ruin. The Unification Church fought and knocked out the established churches, political parties, and the democratic and communist worlds that had opposed it. When the rope is hanging from high up, do you think they could sever it with their own strength? Can they cut off the Unification Church? Whether it is based on philosophy or religion or communication with the spirit world, no one can match us in theory.

This happened when I was in America. There is a spiritualist association, and its head was Arthur Ford. He had heard about Rev. Moon from Asia. Our missionaries did not visit person by per-

son. They would bring Divine Principle books to people who had received spiritual communication and tell them, “Please check what kind of book this is. I will come back in a week.” When the missionaries went back after a week, people would say, “Oh, Master, please come!” (208-193, 1990.11.18)

We should offer sacrifices to God with a theoretical system and practical foundation with which we can subjugate the spirit world. This ceremony of sacrifice was today’s morning pledge service (November 17, 1990, the 31st Children’s Day). In that place, I prayed that since the time had come, the current that had been flowing in reverse through heaven and earth must now flow in the right direction. Since God has restored the birthright of the firstborn, all second sons to be born in the future and those existing now are under His rule. Consequently, in the era of the second son after the restoration of the birthright of the firstborn, heavenly law cannot condone the devil’s sphere of activities.

Up until now, all the spirits in the spirit world have abused Abel on earth. Just as the first son murdered and sacrificed the second son, since we have the birthright of the firstborn here, from now on we can even regulate the spirit world.

Now they must help us in order to receive blessings. The more they oppose us, the deeper into the pit they will fall. Heavenly fortune is changing rapidly. In the future, they will clamor to have a picture of me hanging in each of their hous-

es. From the spirit world your ancestors will admonish you. Accordingly, those who hang up our flag and my picture and bow to it daily will enliven the work of resurrecting their ancestors.

I do not need to say these things because it sounds like I am telling you to obey me absolutely. I do not like saying such things, but there is no other way.

Until now, numerous sundry low-level spiritualists told you not to go to the Unification Church. Yet from now on, if Buddha, Jesus, and Confucius do not encourage people to go to the Unification Church, they will be violating heavenly law. Why? Because the religion I teach is that of the Parents. (208-153, 1990.11.17)

5. 5. 2. Answers about the principle of rebirth

In Asia people talk not about the principle of rebirth but about the theory of reincarnation, which is a Buddhist idea. They view returning resurrection as such a phenomenon, because they just see it as a single instance. They do not see the whole picture. Spirit people in the spirit world want to benefit through people on earth. This is their request.

Original people who have not fallen are valuable beings who can manage the angelic world and the universe. Due to the Fall, people dropped several levels downward and consequently must go back up to that original position. In ascending, however, they do not do so in one step but through stages, restoring individuals, families, tribes, people,

nations, the world, and all the way up to the cosmos.

Originally, people were to go to this world. Yet, because there is no way of going up in one step, each stage must be pioneered and passed through, from the individual to the family, from the family to the tribe, and from the tribe to the race.

In view of God's providence, those who died before the Old Testament Age, which is the age of the providence for individual salvation, desire to enter that age and receive its benefits. As such, going up each stage inevitably requires indemnity. Crossing over each stage inevitably requires conditions of indemnity, like in the case of Cain and Abel.

Even if a spirit named A has been helping through this age up to this point, he cannot cross over into the next stage just like that. There must be a period of indemnity. It is not finished in a day or two but rather over a period of time, such as seven years, forty years, seventy years, or even a few centuries.

Since spirit A, who has been helping up to this point, cannot continue his ascent before his period of indemnity ends, he returns to the spirit world. Spirit A wants someone on earth called B to lay the foundation, but if B fails to indemnify within the period and dies, spirit A chooses someone else called C and waits impatiently to return through C. Thus, the spirit who returns to C is the same A who had returned to B.

Suppose the spirit person is Paul. If A, through whom he returns in an attempt to ascend through each stage over the

ages, fails to indemnify within that period and dies, Paul returns through B and helps him and ascends. There must be an indemnity period.

According to the Principle, indemnity is not accomplished in a short time. For this reason, if B, the second chosen person, does not indemnify, the next person C is chosen for coming again. So eventually, Paul will have returned through C. If B were to leave a message or were to do something, he would say that he is working with Paul's assistance now. Likewise, C in the next age will also say in the message that he is working with Paul's assistance and that he is even Paul himself. This way, it looks as if Paul's spirit appeared in B and again in C around the world.

Looking only at such a phenomenon, people call it reincarnation. It appears like it is this phenomenon of reincarnation. People speak like this, because they do not see the whole picture. Such phenomena will appear in this age as well until the global and cosmic ages.

Originally, people were not supposed to live under Satan's rule but rather within the realm of God's direct dominion. Yet due to the Fall, they have come to live in the fallen domain. In order to escape from this fallen domain, they must pay indemnity as individuals and as families. Without indemnifying this, they cannot escape. Each stage looks like a phenomenon of reincarnation or transmigration of souls, because spirit people must appear in each age through the returning phenomenon.

From this point of view, the same

applies to all of you. If you have faith just as an individual, but die before having a family, you must surmount the standards of the family, tribe, people, nation and world. Because of this, you will not know how many eons it would take. It corresponds to infinity. Even Jesus could not go over the national standard. In order to do so, he has to come again, and only by going over the peak of the nation can he enter heaven. Right now, he is in paradise and the same reasoning applies here.

The person to whom Jesus comes and directly guides and dwells within calls himself “Jesus.” Seeing only this, a person thinks that Jesus is born again in him, which gives rise to the theory of reincarnation. You must understand such a spirit world well.

People who are supposed to live in God’s direct dominion of goodness live instead in the fallen dominion, and thus must escape from the evil dominion. This is why such things happen. Jesus did it spiritually. So did Christianity.

From this point of view, the Unification Principle of Resurrection conforms exactly to the realities of the spirit world. In other words, it teaches you the formulas of the spirit world. So far, countless religious people have experienced these unknown facts of the spirit world but have not understood them clearly.

When you hear this principle, however, do not just learn it as a theory. It is difficult enough to find this principle itself, but you must practice it in your own life and achieve victory. If you fail in this, I will not teach it to you.

In other words, instead of just learning about Noah’s family, Abraham’s family, Jacob’s family, the age of Moses, John the Baptist, and the age of Jesus and stopping there, it involves understanding about them all, paying indemnity for them, and equipped yourself with the restored foundation of victory. I will teach it to you when you have done that.

Unless we turn our past defeats by Satan into victory, we cannot realize God’s will. The figures who took charge of the providence of restoration – such as Noah, Abraham, Jacob and Moses – did not know this. Yet the Lord who is coming upon the earth must indemnify the failures of individuals, families, tribes, people and nations. He is the representative who knows all this and can put it into effect until the ideal world is found. If he does not, it will not be realized.

When meeting the Messiah, what will happen if you believe in and follow him? If you meet him at the time he perfects the ages of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation, you will also receive the benefits of those ages, ascending to the national level. Yet, for those in the age of the individual to receive the Messiah and thereby ascend to the age of the family, they must pay indemnity on earth, just as spirit people do. Also, because they must go through the course of indemnity to ascend from the age of the family to the age of the tribe, the longer they have stayed in the Unification Church, the more indemnity they have paid. The longer they have been here, the closer they are to me.

The way up to the age of the nation is one of vertical ascent, and the national system should be determined and surmounted here. Yet, if you do not continue the process of ascending, you may fall away, because however high the stage to which you ascend, the same phenomena recur, due to indemnity; this is the nature of spiritual phenomena. Indemnity blocks your way. It causes opposition. This is why it is easy to fall away after taking a risk and making a mistake. If you fail here, you will collapse.

The nation of Israel and Judaism prepared to receive the Messiah for over four millennia, but because the Will remained unfulfilled with his death, the prepared foundation completely collapsed. Consequently, countless people have been sacrificed in the ups and downs of the process.

This happens to the mainstream of God's providence, but it also happens to many subsidiary peoples around the world. Through this, indemnity is paid globally.

Since the providence ascends as a mainstream in this way, other people around the world take either conforming or opposing positions and pay indemnity. Things are organized through such indemnity. Until now, countless religions have made many sacrifices in going the course of restoration.

The question is how do people in the spirit world and religious people on earth attain the highest level of goodness? In other words, how do they take their places after transcending the national level? This person becomes the Messiah;

he comes to seek that. As he knows the way to pay indemnity, when people unite with him, even though they have not yet paid indemnity, their indemnity period will be shortened. If a nation takes its place with him, all individuals of the nation will be included here. If a nation pays indemnity, its families, tribes, people, and the nation itself will ascend to the global level. Looking at it this way, think how quickly the world would be restored if one nation were recovered!

Only by establishing a nation can we transcend paradise. Paradise is the same as a waiting room before going to heaven. If errors remain that were committed by Adam, Noah, Abraham and Jacob as they underwent the process of restoration, these must all be indemnified. Without indemnity being paid, horizontal development cannot take place.

From this point of view, we can know how important a nation is. If we have a nation, we will not fall away. For instance, the German government intervenes with the affairs of foreigners in Germany in the same way it does with its own citizens. If a foreigner does something wrong, he is deported. If someone is deported and if he is stateless, where can they go? They have nowhere to go. Even if such a person was sentenced to death, they would have nowhere to appeal.

The same can be said about the satanic realm. In the satanic realm, we are their enemies. As theists are their enemies, how much do they hate and persecute us in their realm? Not only that, even if they were to deport or kill us, we would have nowhere to appeal. Since the

nation is important, God comes looking for it.

In seeking a nation, you must pay indemnity for the individual, family, tribe, people and nation. You must go through indemnity courses as an individual, family, tribe and people. Otherwise, there is no way to the world-level course. Since the nation is the center, each nation must pass through the central nation in order to go this way.

If you died without restoring a nation, you could only return to the earth to support individuals and families, unable to work with dignified authority. You would not be qualified to fight for the occupation of the satanic world.

Accordingly, you can be registered only when a nation appears. Have you been registered? You have been registered with the Unification Church, but not with God's unified nation. Can you be citizens without a nation? No.

Because of this, all the people in the

spirit world hope to assist the people of this nation. Only if you are in this nation will returning phenomena occur horizontally.

As the phenomena occur horizontally, the foundation you work for will remain for you. When ascending in seeking that nation, however much indemnity you may have paid, you would lose everything if you were to collapse. Wherever you might have climbed up to from the bottom, if you were to collapse, everything would disappear. This has happened repeatedly. But when this is being done on a horizontal level, what you have worked for will remain eternally. In other words, in the age of ascending through restoration, you lose what you invested through indemnity, but when a nation is found and we work horizontally, it will be the age in which your efforts will remain as your accomplishments, rather than disappearing as indemnity. (54-277, 1972.3.24)

